

TWENTY-FOUR LECTURES

ON THE

ITALIAN LANGUAGE,

DELIVERED AT THE

LYCEUM

OF

ARTS, SCIENCES, AND LANGUAGES;

IN WHICH THE

PRINCIPLES, HARMONY, AND BEAUTIES

OF THE

Italian Language,

ARE, BY AN ORIGINAL METHOD,

SIMPLIFIED AND ADAPTED TO THE MEANEST CAPACITY,

AND

The Scholar enabled to attain, with Ease and Facility,

A COMPETENT KNOWLEDGE OF THE LANGUAGE,

WITHOUT THE HELP OF ANY

GRAMMAR OR DICTIONARY.

These Lectures are generally followed by a Praxis, nothing similar to which is to be met with in any Italian Grammar; all the Rules are illustrated by the plainest Examples, selected from the most eminent Authors in Prose, and particularly in Verse, in order to familiarize the Learner with Italian Poetry; and the Pronunciation is rendered obvious, by Means of proper Accents.

BY MR. GALIGNANI.

London:

PRINTED FOR THE AUTHOR,

AND SOLD BY

Messrs. B. and J. WHITE, Fleet-Street; Mr. EDWARDS, Pall-Mall, and Bond-Street; Messrs. HOOKHAM and CARPENTER, New Bond-Street; Mr. EMSLEY, Strand; Mr. LONGMAN, Pater-noster-Row; Mr. CAWTHORNE, British Library, Strand; Mr. HEPTINSTALL, Fleet-Street; and by the AUTHOR, No. 3, Little Brook-Street, Hanover-Square.

1796.

PRICE SIX SHILLINGS IN BOARDS.]



1796

TO HIS EXCELLENCY

THE MOST NOBLE

MARQUIS OF SPINOLA,

Envoy extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary from the most serene
Republic of Genoa,

To his Britannic Majesty,

THIS VOLUME,

IS, WITH PERMISSION, RESPECTFULLY INSCRIBED,

BY HIS EXCELLENCY'S

MOST OBLIGED,

AND HUMBLE SERVANT,

J. A. GALIGNANI.

THE UNIVERSITY OF

ALABAMA

LIBRARY

THE UNIVERSITY OF ALABAMA LIBRARY

LIBRARY

LIBRARY

LIBRARY

LIBRARY

LIBRARY

LIBRARY

LIBRARY

LIBRARY

LIBRARY

THE
G E N I U S
OF THE
ITALIAN LANGUAGE.

“ C E T T E langue, est douce, sonore, harmonieuse
“ accentuée plus qu’aucune autre. Elle est douce, par
“ que les articulations y sont peu composées ; que
“ rencontre des consonnes y est rare & sans rudesse.
“ qu’un très-grand nombre de syllabes n’y étant formé
“ que de voyelles, les fréquentes élisions en rendent
“ prononciation plus coulante : elle est sonore, parce q
“ la plupart des voyelles y sont éclatantes, qu’elle n’a p
“ de diphtongues composées, qu’elle a peu ou point
“ voyelles nasales, & que les articulations rares & faci
“ distinguent mieux le son des syllabes, qui en devie
“ plus net & plus plein. A l’égard de l’harmonie, c
“ dépend du nombre & de la prosodie autant que c
“ sons, l’avantage de la langue Italienne est manifeste
“ ce point : car il faut remarquer que ce qui rend u
“ langue harmonieuse, & véritablement pittoresq
“ dépend moins de la force réelle de ses termes, que de
“ distance qu’il y a du doux au fort entre les sons qu’e
“ emploie, & du choix qu’on en peut faire pour
“ tableaux qu’on a à peindre.”

J. J. ROUSSEAU

CECILIA

OF THE

ITALIAN LANGUAGE

CITIZENSHIP IN THE ITALIAN LANGUAGE
The first part of the book is devoted to the study of the Italian language, and the second part to the study of the Italian literature. The book is written in a simple and clear style, and is suitable for the use of students of the Italian language. The book is divided into two parts, the first part being devoted to the study of the Italian language, and the second part to the study of the Italian literature. The book is written in a simple and clear style, and is suitable for the use of students of the Italian language.

CONTENTS.

LECTURE.

PAGE

- I. *On the Letters, and their true Pronunciation; where the Imperfection of the Italian Orthography in respect to the uncertain and difficult Sound of the Letters E, O, S, Z, is supplied by practical Rules; and also the Sound of the most difficult Italian Syllables conveyed by an English Sound* - - - - - :
- II. *On Nouns Substantive, their Variations, their Gender, &c.* - - - - -
- III. *On Adjectives, Articles, Prepositions, with useful Tables, shewing their different Terminations* -
- IV. *Further Remarks on the Use of the Articles IL, LO, LA,* - - - - -
- V. *On the proper Position of the Adjectives* - - -
- VI. *On the indefinite, numeral, and partitive Articles*
- VII. *On the Degrees of Comparison, and on superlative Nouns* - - - - -
- VIII. *On diminutive, augmentative, and collective Nouns* - - - - -
- IX. *On the numerical Nouns* - - - - -
- X. *On the primitive or personal Pronouns* - - -
- XI. *On the derivative, or conjunctive Pronouns* - -
- XII. *Important Remarks on the foregoing Pronouns*

XIII.

LECTURE.	PAGE.
III. <i>On the possessive Pronouns</i> - - - - -	79
IV. <i>On the demonstrative Pronouns</i> - - - - -	85
V. <i>On the relative and interrogative Pronouns</i> -	91
VI. <i>On the indefinite Pronouns</i> - - - - -	97
VII. <i>On the auxiliary Verbs exemplified</i> - - - -	102
VIII. <i>General Remarks on Verbs, followed by a Model of the Verbs of the three Conjugations</i>	118
IX. <i>A Model of passive and reflective Verbs</i> - -	130
X. <i>On the impersonal Verbs, and on the Participles, with plain Rules for distinguishing when the Participles are to agree with the Noun to which they relate</i> - - - - -	138
XI. <i>On Prepositions exemplified</i> - - - - -	146
XII. <i>On Adverbs, Conjunctions exemplified, and on the Interjections</i> - - - - -	151
XIII. <i>On Italian Orthography, viz. of Diphthongs—of Triphthongs—of the Apostrophe—of Alterations in some Words, either by lengthening or Abrevi- ating—and lastly of Accents</i> - - - - -	167
XIV. <i>Two Tables exhibiting in a summary Point of View, what has been said concerning the Variation, of Nouns, Articles, &c. and the Inflexions of all regular Verbs. Also an alpha- betical List of irregular Verbs, conjugated in those Tenses in which they have a different in- flexion from the irregular ones, with many instructive Notes. And lastly, a Collection of regular Verbs of the three Conjugations</i> -	174

(2.)

TWENTY-FOUR LECTURES
ON THE
ITALIAN LANGUAGE,

DELIVERED AT THE
NEW LYCEUM,

&c. &c.

LECTURE I.

On the Letters and their true Pronunciation.

THE Italian Language is written in the following Twenty-two Characters or Letters, viz: A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, J, L, M, N, O, P, Q, R, S, T, U, V, Z, *

The Italian have but 22 letters

Which by the Tuscans are thus called:

ah bee chee dee ay effay gee accah ee ee loongo ellay
A, Bi, Ci, Di, E, Effe, Gi, Acca, I, J, Elle,
emmay ennay o pee koo erray effay tee oo voo dsaitab
Emme, Enne, O, Pi, Cu, Erre, Esse, Ti, U, V, Zeta

How sounded

B, C, D, G, I, J, O, P, Q, T, U, V, are considered as of the masculine gender, and the other ten, A, E, F, H, L, M, N, R, S, Z, are of the feminine.

Some are of the masculine line, and some of the feminine gender.

The Italian Tongue has a great advantage over the English, French, and other European Languages; for the Italian words are pronounced exactly as they

B.

are

Every letter is distinctly sounded

* K, X, Y, and W, are not used in the Italian Alphabet

are written, so that there is not a letter useless either in writing or speaking, except the letter H, which at the beginning of four words is not sounded, as will be observed in its proper place.

E and *O*, *S*, and *Z*, have a double sound.

Mele, *Pesca Botte*, *Colte* have two meanings, according to the *close* or *open* sound of the vowels *E*, *O*,

Some difficulties, however occur, in the Italian pronunciation; these consist chiefly in the double sound of the vowels *E*, and *O*, which are sometimes pronounced *close*, sometimes *open*; and in the consonants *S*, and *Z*: which in some words are sounded *soft*, in others *hard*. The true pronunciation of the vowels *E*, and *O*, are very important, not only for preserving that sweet variety, which the Tuscans give to them, by an *open* and *close* pronunciation; but still more, because there are different words in which *E*, if sounded *open*, signifies one thing; and sounded *close* it signifies another; example: *mele* with the open *E* means *honey*, with the *E* close means *apples*; the *E* in *pesca* sounded open signifies a *peach*; sounded *close* it means *fishing*. *Botte* with the *O* open signifies *blows*; with the *O* close it means a *cask*; *colto* sounded open means *gathered*, sounded *close* it signifies *cultivated*. For words which are written with the same letters, and capable of two meanings, there are no rules to be given; but a little practice with the assistance of the subjoined list of such words, will be quite sufficient to remove this difficulty.

E open as *e* in *let*,

E close as *ai* in *pain*

Tema—Exercise

Tema—Fear

Creta—Crete (the Island)

Creta—Clay

Legge—He reads

Legge—Law

Venti—Winds

Venti—Twenty

Words of
double
meanings.



Peste

<i>Peste</i> —Plague	<i>Peste</i> —Pounded
<i>Messe</i> —Harvest	<i>Messe</i> —Masses
<i>Mezzo</i> --Mean	<i>Mezzo</i> --Too ripe
<i>Esca</i> —That he goes out	<i>Esca</i> ---Allurement
<i>O</i> open like <i>o</i> in <i>not</i> ,	<i>O</i> close like <i>o</i> in <i>note</i> .
<i>Posta</i> —Post	<i>Posta</i> —Put
<i>Torta</i> —Twitsed	<i>Torta</i> —Tart
<i>Corso</i> —Corsican	<i>Corso</i> ---Course, or run
<i>Foro</i> —The bar	<i>Foro</i> —Hole
<i>Rocca</i> —Citadel	<i>Rocca</i> —Distaff
<i>Tosco</i> —Poison	<i>Tosco</i> —Tuscan
<i>Torre</i> —To take away	<i>Torre</i> —A Tower
<i>Volto</i> —Turned	<i>Volto</i> —Face
<i>Voto</i> —A void	<i>Voto</i> ---A vow

As for all other words where *E* and *O* must be sounded either *open* or *close*, in order to preserve that harmonious variety, so much admired in the Italian tongue; take particular notice of the following rules

E is open.

I. In all preterits ending in *ETTI*, or *ERSI*, as *credétti*, I believed; *apérsi*, I opened; in the first imperfects of the subjunctive as *ameréi*, I would love; *credéréi*, I would believe; in the gerunds of verbs of the second, and third conjugation; as *credéndo*, in believing; *leggéndo*, in reading; in the active participles, as *cadénte*, falling; *teménte*, fearing.

When *E* is
sounded
open.

II. In nouns ending in *ENTE* as *clemente*, clement; *prudénte*, prudent; *parénte*, relation; *ardénte*, ardent.

III. All nouns and pronouns that end in *E*, bearing the accent on the *E*, as *Dei*, Gods; *sei*, six; *coléi*, that; *costéi*, this.

IV. The *e* verb (is); *e* conjunction (and); the negative *nè* (neither); and in such interjections *oimè*, *aimè*, (alass).

V. The diminutives ending in *ELLO*, *ELLA*, as *fiumicello*, a little River; *porticella*, a little door; and their plurals, *fiumicelli*, *porticelle*.

VI. When it comes after the vowel *I*, as *tiène*, he or she keeps; *siède*, he or she sits down; *liève*, light; *fiéra*, a wild beast; *piède*, foot.

E. is close.

In what
cases *E* is
sounded
close.

I. In all infinitives as *temére*, to fear; *crédere*, to believe; *cadére*, to fall down; *vedére*, to see; in the preterits ending in *ei*, as *credéi*, I believed; *temér* I feared; *cadéi*, I fell; *vedéi*, I saw; in the second imperfects of the subjunctives of the second conjugation in all their Persons, as *io cadéssi*, I might fall; *tu cadéssi*, *egli cadésse*, *noi cadéssimo*, *voi cadéste*, *eglino cadéssero*; and also in the first and second Persons plural of the future in all verbs, as *amerémo*, we shall love; *ameréte*, you shall love; *crederémo*, we shall believe; *crederéte*, you shall believe; *sentirémo*, we shall feel; *sentiréte*, you shall feel.

II. In monosyllables as *se*, (if) *ne*, (us) *mè*, (me) *se* (himself) *te*, (thee) &c, except those which have been spoken of at No. IV. of the *E* open.

III. In all words accented on the final vowel, as *perchè*, why; *fuorchè*, except *credè*, he believed; *temè*, he feared, &c.

IV.

IV. In the diminutives in *ETTO*, as *leggiadrétto*, amiably-graceful, *Giovinétto*, a young man.

V. In the adverbs ending in *MENTE*, as *egualménte*, equally; *amichevól ménte*, amicably; *totalménte*, intirely *arditaménte*, boldly, &c.

VI. Betwixt the consonants M and N, as *alméno*, at least; *argoménto*, argument; and before two N N's, as *cenno*, hint; *penna*, penn.

VII. The *E* which derives from an *I* latin, is always close, as, *cinis*, *fides*, *silva*, *simplex*, *pirum*, &c; *cénere*, ashes; *fede*, faith; *selva*, forest; *sémplice*, single; *pera*, a pear; &c.

O is open

I. In all monosyllables having an accent on the *O* final, as in the first Persons singular of the future tense of any Italian verb, as *amerò*, I shall love; *leggerò*, I shall read; *sentirò*, I shall hear. In the third Persons singular of the preterit of verbs of the first conjugation, as *amò*, he loved; *andò*, he went; *mangiò*, he eat.

When the
O is to be
sounded
open

II. In all monosyllables ending in *O*, as *sto*, I stay; *vo*, I go; *do*, I give; *so*, I know; *no*, not; &c.

III. When the *O* originates from the diphthong *AU* of the latin, as *aurum*, *tesaurus*, &c. *oro*, gold; *tesóro*, treasure.

IV. *O* following *V*, as in *fuóco*, fire; *cuóre*, heart, *Uómo*, man,

V. When *O* is immediately preceded, by an *R* joined to any other consonant, as *trovo*, I find; *provo*, I prove. &c.

O is close

In what
cases *O* is
rounded
close

I. In words ending with the vowels *OIO*, *OIA*, as *lavatóio*, a place for washing, *mangiatóia*, a manger.

II. In words ending in *ONTO*, *ONTA*, and their plurals, as *affrónto*, affront, *affronti*; *accónto*, account, *accónti*; *pronto*, ready, *pronti*; *onta*, shame, *onte*; *pronta*, ready, *pronte*.

III. In the terminations *ogno*, *ogna*, *ono*, *ona*, *one* and their plurals, as *bisógno*, want; *sogno*, dream; *vergógna*, shame, *menzógna*, lye; *dono*, gift; *perdóno*, forgiveness; *coróna*, crown; *persóna*, person; *bastónes*, stick; *ragióne*, reason.

IV. In all the *O*'s coming from the latin *U* as *pulvis*, *pólvere*, powder; *stultus*, *stolto*, foolish; *multus*, *molto*, much; *Augustus*, *Agósto*, August; *sepultus*, *sepólto*, buried; *rudis*, *rozzo*, ignorant; *super*, *sopra*, upon.

Conclusion.

From what has been said it must be evident, that *E* or *O* open ever occurs, except in those syllables on which the accents fall; although as has been exemplified, there are many syllables of that nature with *E* or *O* close. No words can contain more than one open *O* or *E*.

Rules on the sound of the *S*.

The pronunciation of this letter is one of the most delicate in the Italian tongue, and not perfectly understood by all Italians; the Florentines can with justice boast the most graceful pronunciation of this letter. For learning the true sound of the *S*, which sometimes must be pronounced *gagliárda*, (smart) sometimes *riméssa*; (hissing), the following rules are given.

S.

S. is *gagliarda* (smart), as the *S* in the English words, *close*, *sleep*.

I. Before the consonants *C*, *F*, *P*, *T*, as *scóglio*, rock; *sferza*, a whip; *spécchio*, a looking glass; *stúdio*, study. When *S* is sounded smart as *S* in *close* &c.

II. Followed by a vowel, as in *sella*, saddle; *Santo*, Saint, *gelsomíno*, jessamine; *sordo*, deaf.

III. When it is double wherever it be placed, as in *lesso*, boild; *messo*, put; *dissonánza*, dissonance; *sasso*, stone.

IV. Between two vowels in the adjectives ending in *OSO*, *OSA*; *OSI*, *OSE*, as *fastóso*, pompous, *fastósi*; *virtuóso*, virtuous, *virtuósi*; *scandalósa*, scandalous, *scandalóse*; *amorósa*, amorous, *amoróse*,

V. In the names of nations ending in *ESE*, as *Svezzése*, Swede, *Olandése*, Dutchman; *Inglése*, Englishman; *Genovése*, Genovese; *Milanése*, from Milan; *Cinése*, Chinese.

Note. *Francése* a Frenchman; *Lionése*, from Lyon; *Nivernése*, from Nivern, are excepted, and must be pronounced with the *S* hissing. Exception.

S. is *rimessa*, (hissing), as in the English word *easy*. When *S* is sounded

I. Before every consonant, except those which have been spoken of at No. I of the *S* *gagliarda*; as in the words *smontáre* to descend; *sbigottire*, to be frightened; *disdíre*, to deny; *sgannáre*, to undeceive; *slegáre*, to loosen; *snodáre*, to untie; *sradicáre*, to root up. hissing as *S* in *easy*.

II. In all words which in Latin and in French, are written with an *X*, as *esempio*, example; *esáme*, examination; *esército*, army; *esortazióne*, exhortation.

III. When preceded by the vowel *U*, as *abusáre*, to abuse; *confúso*, confounded; *ottúso*, obtuse; *delúso*, deceived; *accusáre*, to accuse; *causa*, cause. Except *fuso*, spindle; in which *S* is sounded *smart*.

IV. Adjectives in *ESE*, *ESI*, as *cortése*, *cortési*; *palése*, public; *palési*, &c.

V. When it is placed between vowels, as in *prosa*, prose; *rosa*, rose; *Paradiso*, Paradise; *viso*, face; *Asia*, Asia. But this rule has a great number of exceptions and there are many words in which the *S* is sounded *smart*, as in *riso*, laugh; *casa*, house; *posa*, rest; and others which can only be learned by practice.

Rules on the sound of the Z.

This letter has likewise two sounds, viz. *gagliárda*, (smart); or *riméssa*, (hissing). But to discern them properly, is perhaps more difficult than those of the *S*.

Z, is *gagliárda* (smart), and sounds pretty near the *ts*, in the English words *wits*, *fits*,

I. In nouns ending in *ANZA* or *ENZA*, as *danza*, dance; *costanza*, constancy; *cleménza*, clemency; *veeménza*, vehemence, &c.

When *Z* is
smart as *ts*
in *wits* &c.

II. in words having after *Z* one of the following diphthongs, *IA*, *IE*, *IQ*, as *pigrizia*, idleness; *amicizia*, friendship, *amicizie*; *azione*, action, *azioni*; &c.

III. In general when there are two *ZZ* between two vowels, as in *bellézza*, beauty; *dolcézza*, mildness; *fortézza*, fortitude; *certézza*, certainty; *asprézza*, hardship;

hardship; *giovinézza*, youth; *carézza*, caress; *pozzo*, well; *prezzo*, price.

Some words are excepted, as *mezzo*, half; *dimezzare*, to cut in two parts; *intramezzare*, interpose; in which *z* is sounded hissing. Exception,

Z. is *Rimessa*, hissing; as *ds* in the English word *Windsor*.

There are a great number of words in which this letter is to be sounded hissing, as in *zéfiro*, zephyr; *zanzára*, knat; *rezzo*, shade; *rozzo*, rude; *zelo*, zeal; *zénzero*, ginger; *Zodiaco*, Zodiac; *zimbéllo*, allurement; *zero*, nothing; *garzón*, a boy; *donzélla*, a girl; *orzo*, barley; *razzo*, a squib; but without the assistance of a teacher, it is somewhat difficult to learn the true sound of this letter. In which words *Z* is sounded hissing.

Short Observations on the sound of some other Letters and Syllables.

Ź Loongo is a vowel in Italian, we make use of it at the end of some words instead of two *i*'s, as will be observed in its proper place. *Ź* Loongo.

To write *nôja*, instead of *nôia*, vexation; *cuôjo*, instead of *cuôio*, leather; *librájo*, instead of *libráio*, bookseller; *jéri*, instead of *iéri*, yesterday; *jurídico*, instead of *iurídico*, lawful; is not adopted by the Authors of the *Vocabolario della Crusca*.

C before *E* and *I*, is sounded as *CH* in the English words, *chess*, *chill*; in all other combinations it has the hard sound of the English letter *K*. *C*.

G.

The sound of the *G* is soft when followed by *E* or *I*; as in the English words, *gem*, *gin*; and it is hard before all other vowels.

*GIA, GIE,
GIO, GIU.*

When the syllable *GI* is followed by *A, E, O, U*, as *giardino*, garden; *Algiéri*, Algier; *giorno*, day; *giúdice*, judge; it may be pronounced in English thus, *jaw*, *jay*, *joh*, *jew*, because the vowel *I*, in such combinations, is very little sounded*.

Those words in which the vowel *I* bears the accent, as *apologíá*, apology; *bugíá*, lye; *anatomía*, anatomy, *astrología*, astrology; *aristocrazía*, aristocracy; are excepted from the above rule.

GLI has a
soft pro-
nuncia-
tion.

GL before *I* has a soft pronunciation, as in *méglio*, better; *vóglio*, I will; *fíglío*, son; it sounds pretty near as the *GL* in the English word *Seraglio*.

Exception.

The words *negligénza*, negligence; *negligénte*, negligent; *negligere*, to neglect; *Anglicáno*, Briton; are sounded hard as in English.

GN.

The letters *GN* must be pronounced soft, as in *campáña*, country; *regno*, kingdom; it sounds very near the same as *gn* in the word *poignant*.

*GUA,
GUE, GUI,*
as *gwa,
gwe, gwi.*

GU before *A, E, I*, has the same pronunciation, as the syllables *gwa*, *gwe*, *gwi*, have in English; as *guadagnare* to gain; read *gwádnáre*; *guércio*, squiting; read *gwércio*; *guida*, guide; read *gwida*.

H.

The letter *H* has no sound at the beginning of words, as in the English expressions *hour*, *humour*, *herb*; But when it comes between *C* and *E*, *C* and *I*; or *G* and *E*, *G* and

* Take notice, as a general rule, that a vowel, followed by another, making both but one syllable, is always little sounded, and rapidly pronounced.

and *I*, it serves to give them a hard sound as the *ch* in *Cherubim*, and *g* in *geese*. The few words in which *H*, at the beginning is used, to avoid an equivocal signification, and which is very easy to perceive, are the following, *ho*, I have; to distinguish it from *o*, or; *hai*, thou hast; from *ai*, to the; *ha*, he has; from *a*, *H* lengthens the sound of the vowel. *to*; *hanno*, they have; from *anno*, year. In the interjections, such as, *ah!* *eh!* *deh!* &c. *oh!* or *pray!* &c. the *H* serves only to lengthen the sound of the vowel. Sound of *QUA QUE QUI.*

QU before the vowels *A*, *E*, *I*, is pronounced as in the English words *Queen*, *quake*, *quit*,

SC followed by the vowels *E*, *I* is sounded as *sh*; Sound of *as scelleráto*, wicked; therefore read *shelleráto*; *scimitarra*, scymetar; read *shimitarra*. *SC.*

There are some other few combinations of letters, which being easily pronounced do not deserve to be spoken of diffusively. Besides, by the following Table may be learnt, as far as possible, the true sound of almost every Italian syllable, more or less difficult to pronounce.

A Table of Syllables exemplified

Italian Syllables	English Sound.	Examples.	English Signification.
<i>Cia</i>	<i>chia</i>	<i>Ciárta, acciáio</i>	Prating, steel
<i>Chia</i>	<i>keah</i>	<i>Chiáve, chámáre</i>	Key, to call
<i>Che</i>	<i>kay</i>	<i>Cherubíno, Cheto</i>	Cherubin, quiet
<i>Chi</i>	<i>kee</i>	<i>Chímico, Chiméra</i>	A chymist, chimera
<i>Ce</i>	<i>chay</i>	<i>Centro, Cecità</i>	Center, blindness
<i>Ci</i>	<i>chee</i>	<i>Cibo, Ciceróne</i>	Food, Cicero
<i>Cio</i>	<i>cheo</i>	<i>Bácio, Láccio</i>	Kiss, snare
<i>Ciu</i>	<i>cheow</i>	<i>Ciúrma, Fanciúlla</i>	Mob, a child
<i>Gia</i>	<i>jah</i>	<i>Giállo, Giardíno</i>	Yellow, garden

Ge jay	<i>Gelo, Lèggere</i>	Frost, to read
Gi jee	<i>Giro, Gigante</i>	Border, a giant
Gio jeo	<i>Giostra, Giovane</i>	Tilting, a young person
Giu jeoo	<i>Giurare, Giudice</i>	To swear, a judge
Ghiagua	<i>Ghiaccio, Ghianda</i>	Ice, the acorn
Ghie guie	<i>Lusinghiere, Pre- ghiéra</i>	Flattering, prayer
Ghio gueeo	<i>Ghiotto, Inghiottire</i>	Greedy, to swallow
Gli l-le	<i>Gli, Figli</i>	The, son
Glia l-lea	<i>Briglia, Figlia</i>	A bridle, daughter
Glie l-leay	<i>Moglie, Foglie</i>	A wife, leaves
Glio l-leo	<i>Miglio, Consiglio</i>	A mile, counsel
Gliu l-leoo	<i>Orgogliuccio, Cigliuc- cio,</i>	A little pride, pretty little eye-brow
Gna n-neo	<i>Campagna, Legna</i>	Country, fire-wood
Gne n-neo	<i>Montagne, Insigne</i>	Mountains, renowned
Gni n-ne	<i>Regni, Ogni</i>	Kingdoms, every
Gno n-neo	<i>Guadagno, Bagno</i>	Gain, bath
Gnu n-neoo	<i>Ignudo, Ignudare</i>	Naked, to strip naked
Gua gwa	<i>Guardare, Guanto</i>	To keep, glove
Gue gway	<i>Guercio, Sangué</i>	Squint, blood
Gui gwee	<i>Guida, Languire</i>	A guide, to languish
Qua qwa	<i>Qualità, Quasi</i>	Quality, almost
Que quay	<i>Querel, Questione</i>	Complaint, question
Qui qwee	<i>Quindici, Quivi</i>	Fifteen, here
Scia shea	<i>Sciagura, Fascia</i>	Misfortune, a band
See shay	<i>Scempio, Scena</i>	Slaughter, scene
Sci shee	<i>Scintilla, Scimia</i>	A spark of fire, an Ape
Scio sheo	<i>Sciocco, Fascio</i>	A fool, a bundle
Sciu sheoo	<i>Asciutto, Presciutto</i>	Dry, ham
Uq wo	<i>Uomo, Cuore</i>	A man, heart.

LECTURE II.

On Nouns.

Most nouns in Italian are terminated in the singular, by one of the vowels *A, E, O*; some few in *I*, and *U*; Different terminations of nouns.

Nouns in *A*, generally make their plural in *E*, as *pianta*, tree, *piante*; *sorèlla*, sister, *sorèlle*. Nouns marked with the grave accent on the last syllable, as *fedeltà*, fidelity; *beltà*, beauty; *crudeltà*, cruelty; *pietà*, pity, &c. retain in the plural, the same termination*.

Nouns ending in *E* and *O*, make their plural in *I*, as *padre*, father, *padri*; *capèllo*, hezr, *capèlli*; *cappèllo*, hat, *cappèlli*.

Re, king; *effigie*, effigy; *spécie*, species; *superficie*, surface; *barbàrie*, barbarity; *série*, series; *progénie*, offspring; are excepted, and have the same termination in the plural.

Nouns in *I*, and *U*, are of both numbers, as *l'énfasi*, the emphasis, *le énfasi*; *la servitù*, the servitude, *le servitù*.

There are some feminine nouns which have a double singular, and double plural, as *veste* or *vesta*, a vest; *dote* or *dota*, portion; *frode* or *froda*, fraud; *fronde* or *fronda*, a leaf; *ale* or *ala*, wing; *arme* or *arma*, arm; *lode* or *loda*, praise; *canzône* or *canzóna*, song†. Nouns having two terminations.

Nouns

* These words are curtailed from *fedeltàde*, *beltàde*, *crudeltàde* *pietàde*, which still prevail in Poetry, as

Farebbe il suo dolór pietàde a un sasso, Metas

His grief would move a stone to pity.

Non e' vera pietàde

Quella che mostra, nò, ma crudeltàde, Menage,

That which she manifests is not true pity, but cruelty.

† *Canzóna*, is quite vulgar; *vesta*, *dota*, *froda*, *fronda*, *loda*, are very little used.

Of Gender
of Nouns.

Nouns in *A* are of the feminine gender; but the following are excepted, viz. *sistéma*, system; *diadéma*, diadem; *tema*, fear; *pianéta*, planet; *clima*, climate; *poéma*, poem; *idióma*, idiom; *dramma*, a dramatic piece; *epigrámma*, an epigram; *probléma*, a problem; and some nouns of dignity and profession, are also excepted, which are masculine by their meaning, as *Papa*, Pope; *Patriárca*, Patriarch; *Proféta*, Prophet; *Poéta*, Poet; *Monárca*, Monarch; *Duca*, a Duke; *Legístra*, a Lawyer; *Artista*, an Artist; *Geómetra*, Geometrician; *Moralista*, a Moralist.

Nouns in *E*, some are masculine, as *padre*, father; *onóre*, honour; some feminine, as *madre*, mother; *riputazióne*, reputation.

A few may be either masculine, or feminine, as *cénere*, ashes, *fine*, end, *cárcere*, prison; *fonte*, fountain, *serpe*, snake*,

Substantives ending in *IONE*, are generally feminine, as *religióne*, religion; *devozióne*, devotion; *intenzíone*, intention; *nazióne*, nation; *orazióne*, oration.

Nouns ending in *LE*, *ME*, *ORE*, *ONE*, *ENTE*, *ONTE*, are masculine; as *viále*, walk; *lume*, light; *fióre*, flavour; *bastóne*, stick; *dente*, tooth; *ponte*, bridge. The following are excepted, viz. *fame*, hunger; *speme*, hope; *gente*, people; which are feminine.

All nouns in *O*, are masculine, except *mano*, hand; and a few proper names, coming from the Greek, as
Saffo,

* *Cénere* in the plural, is generally feminine; so it is of *cárcere*. *Fine* when means *event*, is feminine.

Saffo, Sapho; *Eráto*, Erathō; *Cloto*, Clotho; *Atrópo*, Atropos; *Alétto*, Alecto; and also *Dido*, Dido; *Cartágo*, Carthage; *immágo*, an image; *testúdo*, a turtle; which are only used in poetry, instead of *Didóne*, *Cartágine*, *immáGINE*, *testúggine*, or *testúdine*.

The few substantives ending in *I*, and *U*, in the singular and plural, are feminine, except *dí*, day, and the days of the week.

Remarks on the Nouns ending in O, and IO CA, and GA, CO, and GO, &c.

Uómo, man; takes a syllable more in the plural, and makes *uómini*, men.

Dio, or *Iddio*, God; (*Iddio* is used only in the nominative) in the plural, in speaking of an heathen Deity, makes *Dei*, and takes the article *gli*.

There are some words in *O*, which have two terminations, viz. in *ARO* and *AIO*, as *libráro*, or *libráio*, bookseller; *calzoláro*, or *calzoláio*, shoemaker; *fornáro*, or *fornáio*, baker; *Gennáro*, or *Gennáio*, January; *Febbráro*, or *Febbráio*, February. Such substantives having the second termination, which is more elegant, become plural in losing their last vowel, as *librái*, *fornái*, *calzolái*, &c.

Nouns
which may
end in *ARO*
or *AIO*.

Some others also may terminate in *RE* and *RO*, as *cavaliére*, or *cavaliéro*, knight; *sentiére*, or *sentiéro*, path; *cónsole*, or *cónsolo*, consul; *pensiére*, or *pensiéro*, thought; *scoláre*, or *scoláro*, scholar; *barbiére*, or *barbiéro*, barber; *destriére*, or *destriéro*, horse; *mestiére*,

Some o-
thers in *RE*
and *RO*:

mestiére, or *mestiéro*, trade. The first termination, viz. in *RE*, is most approved, and used by the best writers.

Nouns which are masculine, in the singular and feminine, in the plural.

A great number of substantives, ending in *O*, in the singular, end in *A* in the plural; and by such a variation they become feminine, as *braccio*, arm; *braccia*, arms; *os* so, bone; *ossa*, bones. In the Declension of nouns, a list of such substantives will be given in its proper place.

How nouns terminated in *CIO*, *CHIO*, *GIO*, *GLIO*, make their plural.

Of nouns ending in *IO*, it must be observed, that some make only one syllable of *IO*, others make two. Those of the first class are generally terminated in *CIO*, *CHIO*, *GIO*, *GLIO*, and become plural, by taking away the *O*, as *bacio*, kiss, *baci*; *specchio*, looking-glass, *spechi*; *orologio*, watch, *orologi*; *consiglio*, counsel, *consigli*.

The second class becomes plural by changing *IO* into a long *J*, as *tempio*, temple, *tempj*; *principio*, beginning, *principj*; *studio*, study, *studj*: to write; *studii*, *principii*, *tempii*, with two i's is obsolete.

Nouns in *CIA*, *SCIA*, *GIA*, reject the *I* in the plural.

Those words which end in *CIA*, *SCIA*, *GIA*, making but one syllable of the two vowels, *IA*, change the *A* into *E*, in the plural, and generally reject the *I*, as *guancia*, cheek, *guance*; *coscia*, thigh, *cosce*; *spiaggia*, sea coast, *spiagge*. Take also notice, that nouns ending in *CA*, or *GA*, of two or more syllables, take an *H*, in the plural, after the *C* and *G*, thus; *CHE*, *GHE*, as *piaga*, the wound; *piaghe*, the wounds; *grammatica*, grammar, *grammatiche*, grammars.

In *CA* or *GA*, take an *H* more in the plural.

In

* It must be observed that nouns in *IO*, which are written with the accent on *I*, cannot be written with a *J* longo in the plural; but the *O* must be changed into a second *I*, as *desio*, desire, *desii*; *mormorio*, murmur, *mormorii*.

In the same manner, words ending in *CO* or *GO*; have an *H* more in the plural, as *luógo*, place, *luóghi*, places; *fuóco*, fire, *fuóchi*, fires. But they do not generally take this letter when they are compounded of more than two syllables, as *amíco*, friend, *amíci*, friends, not *amíchi*; *teólogo*, a divine, *teólogi*, divines, not *teóloghi*; nevertheless many words will be found of three or four syllables, taking an *H* in their plural, as *bifólco*, ploughman, *bifólchi*; *dittóngo*, dipthong, *dittónghi*; *mánico*, handle, *mánichi*; *óbligó*, obligation, *óblighi*; *rammárico*, complaint, *rammárichi*; *ubbriáco*, drunkard, *ubbriáchi*; *pedagógo*, pedagogue, *pedagóghi*; some of such nouns may either take or reject the *H*, as *mendíci*, or *mendíchi*, beggars; *prátici*, or *prátichi*, accustomed; *salvátici*, or *salvátichi*, savage; *astrólogi*, or *astróloghi*, astrologer.

It is the same of nouns ending in *CO*, *GO*.

Exception.

Observe finally, there are some nouns substantives, which from masculine are made feminine, by changing their last letter into the termination *ESSA*, in the following manner.

<i>Duca</i> , a Duke	<i>Duchéssa</i> , a Dutchess
<i>Príncipe</i> , a Prince	<i>Principéssa</i> , a Princess
<i>Conte</i> , a Count	<i>Contéssa</i> , a Countess
<i>Baróne</i> , a Baron	<i>Baronéssa</i> , a Baroness
<i>Poéta</i> , a Poet	<i>Poetéssa</i> , a Poetess
<i>Proféta</i> , a Prophet	<i>Profetéssa</i> , a Prophetess

And some others which change the termination *ORE*, into *RICE*, as

<i>Protettóre</i> , Protector	<i>Protettrice</i> , Protectress
<i>Esecutóre</i> , Executor	<i>Esecutrice</i> , Executrix
<i>Genitóre</i> , Father	<i>Genitrice</i> , Mother

Elettore, Elector
Imperatore, Emperor

Elettrice, Electress
Imperatrice, Empress

LECTURE III.

*On Adjectives and Articles, with useful Tables,
 shewing the Variations of all Nouns, together
 with some Prepositions.*

Of Adjectives.

Termina-
 tions of the
 Adjectives.

Adjectives have but three terminations; if masculine it is in *O*; if feminine, in *A*; for both genders it is in *E*; the first, viz. in *O*, makes its plural in *I*; the second in *E*; the third in *I*; as *buono*, good, *buoni*; *bella*, handsome, *belle*; *prudente*, prudent, *prudenti*.

Adjectives in Italian, must always agree with their substantives.

Adjectives
 ending in
CIO, *CHIO*,
GIO, *GLIO*,
 how they
 become plu-
 ral.

It must be observed, that adjectives ending in *CIO*, *CHIO*, *GIO*, *GLIO*, as they generally make but one syllable of *IO*, become plural, by taking away their final *O*; but if the two vowels *IO*, make two syllables, they become plural, by changing these two vowels into a long *I*, as *savio*, wise, *savj*, &c. Recollect here what has been said a little before of the substantive nouns of the same termination, the rule being precisely the same.

As for the proper place, or position of the adjectives, that point will be stated after the declination of nouns.

As all nouns in whatever situation they are found, never vary their termination, except from the singular

singular into the plural, there are consequently some particles to distinguish their different cases, and which are called articles.

Of Articles.

The Italians have two articles for the masculine gender, viz. *IL*, *LO*, (the) and one for the feminine, viz. *LA*, (the). *IL, LO, LA*
the

The article *IL*, is put before nouns which begin with a consonant, as *il padre*, the father; *il figlio*, the son. *Il Padre,*
&c.

The article *LO*, is put before nouns beginning with an *S*, followed by any other consonant, or beginning by a *Z*; as *lo studio*, the study; *lo spirito*, the spirit; * *lo zelo*, the zeal; *lo zio*, the uncle. It is likewise placed before nouns, that begin with a vowel; but in such cases it loses the *O*, and instead of which it takes an apostrophe; as *l'amore*, the love; *l'odio*, the hatred. *Lo studio.*
&c.

L'amore.
&c.

The article *LA* is placed before all feminine nouns, as *la terra*, the earth; *la luna*, the moon; but when such nouns begin with a vowel, the article loses the *A*, and takes an apostrophe, as *l'amarézza*, the bitterness; *l'impaziénza*, the impatience. *La terra.*
&c.
L'amarézza,
&c.

D 2

Whatever

* All prose-writers are very tenacious of this rule, but poets sometimes are not; as may be seen in the two following verses.

Essendo il spirto dal bel nodo sciolto, Petrarca.

The soul being departed from her beautiful body.

Che delle liquid' onde al spécchio siéde, Ariosto,

Who sits at the mirror of the liquid stream.

Whatever is necessary for the clear understanding of what belongs to substantives, adjectives, and articles, will plainly be shewn by the two following tables.]

*A Table of the Articles and their Variations,
With Short Remarks.*

Variations of the arti- cles.	Sing. Masc.	Plur.	Sing.
	<i>Il, The*</i> <i>Del, Of the</i> <i>Al, Of the</i> <i>Dal, From the</i>	<i>I, The;</i> <i>Dei, or De'† Of the,</i> <i>Ai, or A' To the,</i> <i>Dai, or Da' From the</i>	
* when the following word begins by an <i>Impersonal</i> , ex: <i>Lo Specchio</i> (Looking-glass)	Sing. Masc.	Plur.	Sing.
	<i>Lo, The†</i>	<i>Gli, The</i>	
	<i>Dello, Of the</i>	<i>Degli, Of the</i>	
	<i>Allo, To the</i>	<i>Agli, To the</i>	
	<i>Dallo, From the</i>	<i>Dagli, From the</i>	

Remarks
on articles.

* The article *IL* admits sometimes of an elision by taking away the first letter, and putting an apostrophe in its stead, thus *'l*, as *tra 'l padre, e 'l figlio*, pronounced as it spelt, *tral padre, el figlio*, between the father and the son; *ditemi 'l vero*, pronounce *ditemil vero*, tell me the truth; but this elision depends entirely on the writer's pleasure.

† It is better to make use of *de' a' da'* with an apostrophe before a possessive pronoun in the plural, and before indeterminate nouns, as *de' miei amici*, of my friends; *a' viaggiatori*, to the travellers; *da' principi*, from the princess.

‡ The article *LO* suffers always, in the singular, an elision before a vowel; as *l'Amore*, the love; but it is not the same in the plural. In the latter case it happens only when the nouns

Sing. Fem.	Plur.
<i>La,</i> The *	<i>Le,</i> The
<i>Della,</i> Of the	<i>Delle,</i> Of the
<i>Alla,</i> To the	<i>Alle,</i> To the
<i>Dalla,</i> From the	<i>Dalle,</i> From the

A Table of the Variations of Substantive and Adjective Nouns, with their Article, together with some Prepositions.

Nouns of Masculine Gender, which require the Article *IL*,

<i>Il ciélo stelláto,</i>	<i>I ciéli stelláti</i>
The starry heaven	The starry heavens
<i>Del ciélo stelláto,</i>	<i>Dei or de' ciéli stelláti,</i>
Of the, &c.	Of the &c.
<i>Al ciélo stelláto,</i>	<i>Ai or a' ciéli stelláti,</i>
To the, &c.	To the &c.
<i>Dal ciélo stelláto</i>	<i>Dai or da' ciéli stelláti</i>
From the &c.	From the, &c.

PRE-

nouns begin with an *I*, in order to avoid the disagreeable sound of two *i*'s, following one another, as *l'Imperátore*, the Emperor, *Gl' Imperatóri*, the Emperors, not *Gli Imperatóri*.

* What has been observed in the elision of the article *LO*, applies likewise to the article *LA*; but it must be remarked that before a few words which have, in the singular and plural, the same termination, the number being entirely

PREPOSITIONS.

<i>Nel ciélo seréno</i>	In the serene heaven
<i>* Pel ciélo risplendénte</i>	For the resplendant, &c.
<i>† Col ciélo oscúro</i>	With the obscure, &c.
<i>‡ Sul ciélo cristallíno</i>	Upon the crystalline, &c.
<i>¶ Neí, or ne' ciéli seréni</i>	In the serene heavens
<i>§ Peí, or pe' ciéli risplendénti</i>	For the resplendant, &c.
<i> Coí, or co' ciéli oscúri</i>	With the obscure, &c.
<i>¶ Su í, or su' ciéli cristallíni</i>	Upon the crystalline, &c.

These Prepositions must always be used in this Manner before a Masculine Noun which requires the Article *IL*.

Nouns
which re-
quire the
Article *IL*.

<i>Il príncipe generóso,</i>	The generous prince
<i>Del príncipe generóso .</i>	Of the &c.
<i>Al príncipe generóso</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dal príncipe generóso</i>	From the, &c.

I

tirely determined by the article, it cannot in such case suffer an elision, as *l'età*, the age; *le età*, the ages; *l'estremità*, the extremity; *le estremità*, the extremities.

* Some say *per il*, instead of *pel*, but it is improper.

† *Con il*, instead of *col*, is very little used.

‡ *Su 'l*, for *sul*, is obsolete.

§ *Per í*, instead of *pei* or *pe'*, is incorrect.

|| *Con í*, for *coi* or *co'*, is likewise incorrect.

¶ Some write *sui*, which orthography is rather improper.

<i>I principi generósi</i>	The generous princess
* <i>De' principi generósi</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>A' principi generósi</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Da' principi generósi</i>	From the, &c.
<i>Il principio malagévole</i>	The difficult beginning
<i>Del principio mala- gévole</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Al principio malagévole</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Da' principio malagévole</i>	From the, &c.
<i>I principj malagévoli</i>	The difficult beginnings
<i>De' principj malagévoli</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>A' principj malagévoli</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Da' principj malagévoli</i>	From the, &c.
<i>Il dì sventuráto</i>	The unhappy day
<i>Del dì sventuráto</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Al dì sventuráto</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dal dì sventuráto</i>	From the, &c.
<i>I dì sventuráti</i>	The unhappy days
<i>De' dì sventuráti</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>A' dì sventuráti</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Da' dì sventuráti,</i>	From the, &c.

Nouns

* I have written *de' a' da' principi* not *dei, ai, dai, &c.* for the reason alledged in the articles; see the table of the articles, note †.

Nouns of the Masculine Gender which require the Article LO.

Nouns
which take
the Article
LO.

<i>Lo spavénto terribile</i>	The terrible fright
<i>Dello spavénto terribile</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Allo spavénto terribile</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dallo spavénto terribile</i>	From the, &c.
<i>Gli spavénti terribili</i>	The terrible frights
<i>Degli spavénti terribili</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Agli spavénti terribili</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dagli spavénti terribili</i>	From the, &c.
<i>Lo stúdio interrótto</i>	The interrupted study
<i>Dello stúdio interrótto</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Allo stúdio interrótto</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dallo stúdio interrótto</i>	From the, &c.
<i>Gli stúdj interrótti</i>	The interrupted studies
<i>Degli stúdj interrótti</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Agli stúdj interrótti</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Degli stúdj interrótti</i>	From the, &c.

PREPOSITIONS. *

<i>in</i>	<i>Nello scettro aureo</i>	In the golden sceptre
<i>per lo</i>	<i>Pello scettro reale</i>	For the royal, &c.
<i>con lo</i>	<i>Collo scettro ducale</i>	With the ducal, &c.
<i>sopra lo</i>	<i>Sullo scettro imperiale</i>	Upon the imperial, &c.
<i>in</i>	<i>Sulla</i>	Negli

* Some say (and it is not improper) *per lo*, instead of *pello*; *per gli*, instead of *pegli*; *con lo*, instead of *collo*; *con gli*, instead of *cogli*; *sopra lo*, for *sullo*; *sopra gli*, for *sugli*.

<i>Negli scettri áurei</i>	In the golden sceptres
<i>Pegli scettri reáli</i>	For the royal, &c.
<i>Cogli scettri ducáli</i>	With the ducal, &c.
<i>Sugli scettri imperiáli</i>	Upon the imperial, &c.

The same Prepositions must be placed before every Masculine Noun which takes the Article *LO*.

<i>Lo zio bisbético</i>	The whimsical uncle
<i>Dello zio bisbético</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Allo zio bisbético</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dallo zio bisbético</i>	From the, &c.
<i>Gli zii bisbétici</i>	The whimsical uncles
<i>Degli zii bisbétici</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Agli zii bisbétici</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dagli zii bisbétici</i>	From the, &c.

Nouns of the Masculine Gender which require the Article LO with an Apostrophe.

<i>L'amóre ciéco</i>	The blind love
<i>Dell' amóre imprudente</i>	Of the imprudent, &c.
<i>All' amóre inveterato</i>	To the inveterate, &c.
<i>Dall' amóre finto</i>	From the feigned, &c.
<i>Gli amóri ciéchi</i>	The blind loves
<i>Degli amóri imprudenti</i>	Of the imprudent, &c.
<i>Agli amóri inveterati</i>	To the inveterate, &c.
<i>Dagli amóri finti</i>	From the feigned, &c.
<i>L'incéndio spaventévole</i>	The dreadful fire
<i>Dell' incéndio inestinguibile</i>	Of the inextinguishable,
<i>All' incéndio rovinoso</i>	To the ruinous, &c.
<i>Dall' incéndio amoroso</i>	From the amorous, &c.

Nouns
which take
the article
LO with an
postrophe.

<i>Gl' incéndj spaventévoli</i>	The dreadful fires
<i>Degl' incéndj inestinguibili</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Agl' incéndj rovinósi</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dagl' incéndj amorósi</i>	From the, &c.

PREPOSITIONS.

<i>Nell' ódio perpétuo</i>	In the perpetual hatred
<i>Pell' uómo dabbéne</i>	For the honest man
<i>Coll' acciáio insanguináto</i>	With the bloody sword
<i>Sull' amóre patérno</i>	Upon the paternal love
<i>Negli ódj perpétui</i>	In the perpetual hatreds
<i>Pegli uómini dabbéne</i>	For the honest men
<i>Cogli acciáí insanguináti</i>	With the bloody swords
<i>Sugli amóri patérni</i>	Upon the paternal loves

These Prepositions are always placed in the same manner before every Masculine Noun, which begins with a vowel.

Nouns Masculine in the Singular, and Feminine in the Plural.

<i>Il ginóchio</i>	The knee	<i>Le ginóchia</i>	The knees
<i>Del ginóchio</i>	Of the, &c.	<i>Delle ginóchia</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Al ginóchio</i>	To the, &c.	<i>Alle ginóchia</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dal ginóchio</i>	From the	<i>Dalle ginóchia</i>	From the
<i>Il bráccio</i>	The arm	<i>Le bráccia</i>	The arms
<i>Del bráccio</i>	Of the, &c.	<i>Delle bráccia</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Al bráccio</i>	To the, &c.	<i>Alle bráccia</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dal bráccio</i>	From the, &c.	<i>Dalle bráccia</i>	From the, &c.

In

In like manner the following are declined.

Nouns masculine in the singular and feminine in the plural.

<i>Anéllo</i>	Ring	<i>Budéllo</i>	Cut
<i>Calcágno</i>	Heel	<i>Castello</i>	Castle
<i>Centináio</i> or <i>Centináro</i>	} Hundred	<i>Cervello</i>	Brain
<i>Cíglío</i>		<i>Corno</i>	Horn
<i>Dito</i>	Finger	<i>Ditello</i>	The arm-pit
<i>Fondaménto</i>	Foundation	<i>Fuso</i>	Spindle
<i>Filo</i>	Thread	<i>Frutto</i>	Fruit
<i>Grido</i>	Out-cry	<i>Gúscio</i>	Shell
<i>Labbro</i>	Lip	<i>Legno</i>	Wood
<i>Lenzuólo</i>	Sheet	<i>Membro</i>	Member
<i>Móggio</i>	Quarter	<i>Migliáio</i>	Thousand
(1000) <i>Miglio</i>	Mile	<i>Melo</i>	Apple-tree
<i>Muro</i>	Wall	<i>Orécchio</i>	Ear
<i>Páio</i>	Pair	<i>Pero</i>	Pear-tree
<i>Pugno</i>	Fist	<i>Riso</i>	Laughter
<i>Stáio</i>	Busshel	<i>Strido</i>	Noise
<i>Vestígio</i>	Foot-step	<i>Vestiménto</i>	Apparel
<i>Uóvo</i>	Egg.*		

Nouns of the Feminine Gender which require the Article *LA*.

<i>La fatica incredibile</i>	The incredible fatigue
<i>Della fatica incredibile</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Alla fatica incredibile</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dalla fatica incredibile</i>	From the, &c.

E 2

Le

* Most of these Nouns may also have the termination in *I*, and then they are masculine, as in the singular; but the termination in *A* is more elegant.

Nouns
which take
the article
LA.

(28)

<i>Le fatiche incredibili</i>	The incredible fatigues
<i>Delle fatiche incredibili</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Alle fatiche incredibili</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dalle fatiche incredibili</i>	From the &c.
<i>La moglie ingannata</i>	The deceived wife
<i>Della moglie ingannata</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Alla moglie ingannata</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dalla moglie ingannata</i>	From the, &c.
<i>Le mogli ingannate*</i>	The deceived wives
<i>Delle mogli ingannate</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Alle mogli ingannate</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dalle mogli ingannate</i>	From the, &c.
<i>La guancia pienotta</i>	The plump cheek
<i>Della guancia pienotta</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Alla guancia pienotta</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dalla guancia pienotta</i>	From the, &c.
<i>Le guance pienotte†</i>	The plump cheeks
<i>Delle guance pienotte</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Alle guance pienotte</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dalle guance pienotte</i>	From the, &c.

PREPOSITIONS.

<i>Colla fatica continua</i>	With the continual fa- tigue
<i>Pella fatica indicibile</i>	For the inexpressible, &c.
<i>Nella moglie infedele</i>	In the infidel wife
<i>Sulla guancia morbida</i>	Upon the soft cheek

Colle

* *Moglie*, as here shewn, becomes plural by losing the *E*,
† *Guancia*, *coscia*, thigh; *spiaggia*, sea-coast, and a few
others, ending in *CIA*, *SCIA*, or *GIA*, making but one syl-
lable of *IA*, generally become plural by changing *A* into *E*
and rejecting the *I*.

<i>Colle fatiche continue*</i>	With the continual fatigues
<i>Pelle fatiche indicibili</i>	For the inexpressible, &c.
<i>Nelle mogli infedeli</i>	In the infidel wives
<i>Sulle guance morbide</i>	Upon the smooth cheeks

Make use of these Prepositions before every Feminine Noun, which does not begin with a vowel.

—

Nouns of the Feminine Gender beginning with a Vowel.

<i>L' anima immortale</i>	The immortal soul	Nouns which take the article <i>LA</i> with an apostrophe.
<i>Dell' anima immortale</i>	Of the, &c.	
<i>All' anima immortale</i>	To the, &c.	
<i>Dall' anima immortale</i>	From the, &c.	
<i>Le anime immortali</i>	The immortal souls	
<i>Delle anime immortali</i>	Of the, &c.	
<i>Alle anime immortali</i>	To the, &c.	
<i>Dalle anime immortali</i>	From the, &c.	
<i>L' educazione trascurata</i>	The neglected education	
<i>Dell' educazione trascurata</i>	Of the, &c.	
<i>All' educazione trascurata</i>	To the, &c.	
<i>Dall' educazione trascurata</i>	From the, &c.	
<i>L' educazioni trascurate</i>	The neglected educations	
<i>Dell' educazioni trascurate</i>	Of the, &c.	
<i>All' educazioni trascurate</i>	To the, &c.	
<i>Dall' educazioni trascurate</i>	From the, &c.	

PREPOSITIONS.

* Some say (without impropriety) *con la, con le*, instead of *colla, colle*; *per la, per le*, instead of *pella, pelle*.

PREPOSITIONS.

<i>Nell' ànima pensànte</i>	In the thinking soul
<i>Coll' ànima spirituale</i>	With the spiritual, &c.
<i>Pell' educazióne matrèna</i>	For the maternal education
<i>Sull' educazióne patrèna</i>	Upon the paternal, &c.
<i>Nelle ànime pensànti</i>	In the thinking souls
<i>Colle ànime spirituali</i>	With the spiritual, &c.
<i>Pell' educazioni matrène</i>	For the maternal educations.
<i>Sull' educazioni patrène</i>	Upon the, &c.

Every Feminine Noun, beginning with a Vowel, requires these Prepositions.

Nouns which have the same Termination in the Singular and in the Plural.

<i>L' età matúra</i>	The ripe age
<i>Dell' età avanzáta</i>	Of the advanced age
<i>All' età decrepita</i>	To the decrepid, &c.
<i>Dall' età giovanile</i>	From the youthful, &c.
<i>Le età matúre*</i>	The ripe ages
<i>Delle età avanzáte</i>	Of the advanced, etc.
<i>Alle età decrepite</i>	To the decrepid, &c.
<i>Dalle età giovanili</i>	From the youthful, &c.

So are declined *fedeltà*, fidelity; *beltà*, beauty; *crudeltà*, cruelty; *equità*, equity; *dignità*, dignity; *opportunità*

* Recollect here what has been said in the Table of Articles, Note*; At the same time it is worth observing, that the Article *Le*, before *età matúre* may be used with an apostrophe, as the Adjective shews the number,

opportunità, opportunity; *iniquità*, iniquity; *bontà*, goodness; *virilità*, virility; *purezza*, purity; *castità*, chastity; *carità*, charity; *potestà*, or *podestà*, power; *generosità*, generosity; *maestà*, majesty; *libertà*, liberty. Nouns which keep the same termination in the plural, as in the singular.

<i>La gioventù sconsigliata</i>	The imprudent youth
<i>Della gioventù savia</i>	Of the wise youth
<i>Alla gioventù scostumata</i>	To the immoral, &c.
<i>Dalla gioventù amabile</i>	From the amiable, &c.
<i>Le gioventù sconsigliate</i>	The imprudent youths
<i>Delle gioventù savie</i>	Of the wise &c.
<i>Alle gioventù scostumate</i>	To the immoral, &c.
<i>Dalle gioventù amabili</i>	From the amiable, &c.

In the same manner are declined *schiavitù*, slavery; *servitù*, servitude; *tribù*, tribe; *virtù*, virtue; *grù*, crane,

<i>L' eclissi solare</i>	The solar eclipse
<i>Dell' eclissi solare</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>All' eclissi solare</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dall' eclissi solare</i>	From the, &c.
<i>Le eclissi solari</i>	The solar eclipses
<i>Delle eclissi solari</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Alle eclissi solari</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dalle eclissi solari</i>	From the, &c.

In the same manner are declined *diocesi*, diocese; *èstasi*, extasy; *énfasi*, emphasis; *paráfrasi*, paraphrase; *paréntesi*, parenthesis; *metamórfofi*, metamorphosis; *ipótesi*, hypothesis; *iri*, for *iride*, rainbow; *pari*, equal; *génesi*, genesis.*

La

* *Genesi* is of both genders; *pari*, is of both genders and numbers; and we say *un pari vostro*---such a man as you;

<i>La superficie quadrata</i>	The square surface
<i>Della superficie quadrata</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Alla superficie quadrata</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dalla superficie quadrata</i>	From the, &c.
<i>Le superficie quadrato</i>	The square surfaces
<i>Delle superficie quadrato</i>	Of the, &c.
<i>Alle superficie quadrato</i>	To the, &c.
<i>Dalle superficie quadrato</i>	From the, &c.

In like manner conjugate the following :

Il Re, the King ; *il lacchè*, the running footman ;
il vicerè, the vice-roy ; *la specie*, the kind ; *l'effigie*,
 effigy ; *la mercè*, the reward ; *la tempérie*, the tempe-
 rature.

*Exercises upon Articles, Nouns, both Substan-
 tives and Adjectives, together with Prepositions.*

The great events and revolutions of France. The

grande evento *rivoluzione* *Francia*
 eclipsis of the moon. The study of belle letters.
eclissi *luna* *studio* *belle lettere*

The looking-glass of my room. The fear of the

specchio *mio camera* *timore*
 torments of hell. The virtues of the Romans. The

tormento *inferno* *virtù* *Romano*
 hatred of my enemies. All the bones of your body

odio *mio nemico* *osso* *vostro corpo*

The ring of the princess. The fable of the frogs.

anello *principessa* *favola* *rana*
sguardo

una pari vostra, such a woman as you ; *i pari suoi*, their
 equals ; *le pari sue*, their equals.

The looks of the assembly. The country of the
sguardo assemblea paese
 Amazons. To imitate the ancients. The handsome
amazzone imitare antico bello
 women of London. All the prophets of the world.
donna Londra profeta mondo
 All the booksellers of this town. The great satisfac-
libraio questo città grande soddis-
 tion I have. The tree of liberty. The bottles and
fazione, che io ho álbero libertà bottiglia
 glasses. The friends and enemies of your country.
bicchiere amico nemico vostro paese
 The misfortunes of the people. The Emperors and
disgrazia popolo imperatore
 Empresses. The diligent master I have got. The
imperatrice diligente maestro, che io ho
 most difficult exercises. The herbs of the apothecary
più difficile esercizio erba speziale
 The loves of Phylis. I have three uncles. The
amore filide Io ho tre zio
 happy state of England. The bad success of that
felice stato Inghilterra cattivo successo quello
 undertaking. The black eyes of my sister. The
intrapresa nero occhio mio sorella
 noise of the mob. The days of the week. With the
rumore plebaglia di settimana
 spirit. With the books. With the honour. With
spirito libro onore
 the thinking soul. Upon the table. Upon the organ.
pensante anima tavola organo
 Upon the harpsichord. Upon the appearances. In
cembalo apparenza

the election. In the chamber. In the kingdom.

elezione

cámara

regno

In the winters. In the effigies. For the time.

inverno

effigie

tempo

For the love. For the study. For the wife. For

amóre

stúdio

móglie

the bitterness.

Amarézza

LECTURE IV.

Further Remarks on the Use of the Articles IL, LO, LA (the)

There are many names in English, which do not admit of the article before them, as names of *Arts, Sciences, Virtues, Vices, Metals* and others. In Italian they take always the article, as will be seen in the following instances.

Virtue cannot agree with vice. *La virtù non può accordarsi col vizio*

Chastity, modesty and humility are lovely virtues. *La castità, la modestia e l'umiltà sono virtù amabili*

Drunkenness is abominable. *L'ubbriachezza è abominevole*

Hope is the ground of the christian religion. *La speranza è il fondamento della religión christiana*

Music is pleasing to the ear. *La música è grata all'orecchio*

Philosophy

Nouns
which take
the definite
article.

Philosophy is the mistress of wisdom. *La Filosofia è la maestra della sapienza*
 Gold and silver do all things. *L'oro e l'argento fanno ogni cosa*

EXERCISES.

He punishes pride; she blames vanity; you
egli punisce orgoglio; ella biasima vanità; Voi
 preach temperance; they love virtue; to avoid
prediccate temperanza; églino amano virtù; schifare
 idleness; to reward sobriety; thou hatest vice;
pigrizia; ricompensare sobrietà; tu odi vizio;
 I will learn drawing; to study geography; to
Io imparerò disegna; studiare geografia;
 neglect painting; iron and steel are more useful
trascurare pittura; ferro e acciaio sono più utile
 than gold and silver.
dell' oro e argento.

Some nouns taken in a general and indefinite sense,
 have in Italian the article, contrary to the English,

Nouns also
 taken in a
 general
 sense, admit
 of the arti-
 cle.

I like milk, butter and cheese. *Mi piace il latte, il burro, ed il cacio.*

Wine rejoices the heart. *Il vino rallegra il cuore.*

Beef is the partridge of England. *Il bue è la pernice d'Inghilterra.*

Grass and hay are the food of cattle. *L'erba ed il fieno sono il pasto degli animali.*

English people like roast meat better than boiled meat. *Agl' Inglesi piace più l'arrosto del lessò.*

Bread is the staff of life. *Il pane è il sostegno della vita.*

EXERCISES.

EXERCISES.

Rye, wheat, barley ; I love wine ; I proclaim
Ségala, forménto, orzo ; Mi piáce vino ; Io proclámo
 peace ; I declare war ; salt, vinegar, oil ; you
pace ; Io dichiáro guérra ; sale, acéto, óglio ; voi
 admire beauty.
ammiráte bellézza.

The same
 article is
 placed
 before
 nouns of
 dignity.

The article is also placed in Italian before nouns of
 dignity, as

King Charles.

Il Re Carlo.

Prince Henry.

Il Príncipe Arrigo.

Queen John.

La Regína Giovánna.

EXERCISES.

Count Saxe ; General Ligonier ; Marshal d'Es-
Conte di Sassónia ; Generále Ligonier ; Maresciállo d'Es-
 tres ; Lieutenant Gordon ; Queen Charlotte ;
tres ; Luogotenénte Gordon ; Regína Carlóttá.
 Emperor Leopoldo.
Imperatóre Leopóldo.

The article
 is likewise
 put before
 an adverb.

We likewise meet sometimes with the article before
 an adverb, as *e' l dove*, and where ; *e' l quándo*, and
 when ; *del come*, how ; *il perchè*, why.

Before
 nouns of na-
 tions.

The four parts of the world, and some names of na-
 tions, islands and provinces, generally take the arti-
 cle, as *l'Affrica, dell' Affrica, &c. l'América, dell*
América, &c. l'Európa ; l'Asia ; la Fráncia ; l'Inghil-
térra ; la Mirándola ; il Cáiro ; la Lombardía ; la
Sardégna ; la Córstica ; l' Elba, &c.

Note.

Note. Some of the above nouns may also take the indefinite article, as will be observed in the following Lecture.

Nouns of family when applied to a single person, admit of the article, as *il Dante, il Boccaccio, il Petrarca, l' Ariosto, il Tasso, il Fracastoro, il Coltellini, &c.** Before nouns of family.

In Italian they repeat the article as follows.

The Kings and Princes. *I Re ed i Principi.*

The light and darkness. *La luce e le tenebre.*

The brothers and sisters of the Emperor. *I fratelli e le sorelle dell' Imperatore.*

EXERCISES.

The eyes and ears; the arms and legs; the father
occhio e orecchia; braccio e gamba; padre,
mother, and children; the days and nights;
madre; e figlio; giorno notte;
the palace and garden.

palazzo giardino. /

In several instances, the Italians make use of the article instead of the possessive pronoun as,

I will

* *Quel buon omaccino del Coltellini.*

That little good man *Coltellini.*

} Salvini.

Io veggio il Fracastor, il Bevazzano.

Trifon Gabriele, e il Tasso piu lontano.

} Ariosto.

I see Fracastoro, Bevazzano, Trifon Gabriele, and a little farther I see Tasso,

the article
used in
Italian when
English
posses-
sive pro-
noun is
used,

I will break your head. *Io vi romperò il capo.*
My eyes are sore. *Ho male agli occhi.*
I will throw this at your face. *Vi getterò questo al viso.*

EXERCISES.

Wash your hands; my head aches; I have burnt
Lavatevi le mani; mi duole capo; mi sono bruciato
my finger; she has lost her sight; he has lost his hat
dito; ella ha perduto vista; egli cappello
and his purse.
borsa.

LECTURE V.

On the Position of Adjective Nouns.

Adjectives
Italian
are gene-
rally be-
fore ei-
ther before,
after sub-
stantives.

Adjectives in English are always placed before the substantives, unless something depend on the adjective, as *food convenient for me, cibo conveniente per me*; or the adjective be emphatical, as *Alexander the Great, Alessáandro il grande*; but in Italian they may generally be placed either before or after the substantive, as *un amico buono*, a good friend, or *un buon amico*, *un negozio brutto*, a bad affair; or *un brutto negozio*; *un nobile aspetto*, a noble face; or *un aspetto nobile*; nevertheless there are some cases in which the adjectives are used after the substantives, as will be exemplified in the following instances.

I. All adjectives of *Nations* are placed after the substantive, as

Un

<i>Un principe Románo.</i>	A Roman prince.
<i>Una dama Inglés.</i>	An English lady.
<i>Un cavalier Napoletáno.</i>	A Neapolitan Knight.
<i>Un nobile Veneziano.</i>	A Venetian Nobleman, &c.

In some instances they are placed after substantives.

II. Adjectives expressing either *shape* or *form*, as

<i>Una tavola rotónda.</i>	A round table.
<i>Una donna grande.</i>	A tall woman.
<i>Uno spécchio ovale</i>	An oval looking-glass.

III. Adjectives denoting the *quality* of the *elements*, as,

<i>Un tempo piovoso.</i>	Rainy weather.
<i>Una terra árida.</i>	A dry ground.
<i>Un fuoco intenso.</i>	An intense fire.
<i>Un ária salubre.</i>	A wholesome air.
<i>Tempo caldo, or freddo</i>	Hot, or cold weather.

IV. Adjectives expressing *colours*, as

<i>Un ábito nero</i>	A black cloth.
<i>occhio rosso.</i>	Red eye.
<i>Vino biáncó.</i>	White wine.
<i>Un fiór giallo.</i>	A yellow.

V. Adjectives of *taste*, as

<i>Un' erba amára</i>	A bitter herb.
<i>Cidro agro.</i>	Sour cyder.
<i>Frutto dolce.</i>	Sweet fruit.

VI. *Verbal adjectives*, as

<i>Vino cotto.</i>	Burnt wine.
<i>Passione dominante.</i>	An over-ruling passion.

VII. Adjectives denoting *physical* or *mental* *qualities*, as,

Una

<i>Una ragazza stroppiata.</i>	A lame girl.
<i>Un soldato monco.</i>	A maimed soldier.
<i>Un cibo salubre.</i>	A wholesome food.
<i>Un uomo virtuoso, e pio.</i>	A pious and virtuous man.*

There are some other cases in which adjectives are placed after substantives, and which being so placed, chiefly for the sake of harmony of sound, may be easily learnt by a little practice.

EXERCISES.

English politics ; French fashions ; Chinese language ; the Italian music ; a square table ; round balls ; an oval picture ; triangular plan ; wholesome situation ; a warm wind ; a bad air ; a foggy season ; a red cap ; black hats ; a white coat ; brown gown ; bad fish ; insipid grape ; unripe peach ; the over-ruling religion ;

* Generally when there are two or more adjectives joined to the noun, the adjectives in Italian follow the substantive : in English, they may follow or precede, as *una donna dotta e religiosa*, a woman learned and religious, or a learned and religious woman.

religion; discoloured flower; toothless old woman;

religióne; scoloríto fióre; sdentáto vécchia
an awkward young man. ²

sguaiáto giòvane.

LECTURE VI.

On the Indefinite, Numeral, and Partitive Articles.

Beside the above-mentioned articles, which are generally called *definite articles*; there are some others commonly called *indefinite articles*, viz. *di*, of; *a*, to; *da*, from.

Of the indefinite articles *di*, *a*, *da*.

Such definition of *definite* and *indefinite articles*, though not very accurate; the former being as well as the latter sometimes used in a definite, and at others in an indefinite sense, as appears in several instances in our language; nevertheless as this definition is followed by almost all grammarians, it is adopted here, as the only one to which the generality of scholars are accustomed.

The *indefinite articles* are indiscriminately put before nouns masculine or feminine, singular and plural; before pronouns, as well as before infinite verbs, adverbs, and prepositions, as will be shewn by the following miscellaneous rules illustrated by proper examples.

In what cases they are used.

These articles are used.

I. Between two nouns substantive ; as *una raunanza di donne*, an assembly of women ; *un esercito di soldati*, an army of soldiers ; *un cappello di paglia*, a straw hat ; *una corona d' alloro*, a laurel crown.

II. Before a proper name ; as *di Piétro*, of Peter ; *a Páolo*, to Paul ; *da Andréa*, from Andrew.

III. Before almost every kind of pronouns ; as *di me*, of me ; *di noi*, of us ; *a quéstó*, to this ; *da' quél-
l'*, from that ; *di nessuno*, of any body ; *a qualunque*,
to every body ; *di che paése siéte ?* of what country are
you ? *a che paése andáte ?* to what country are you
going ? *da qual luógo*, or *d'onde veníte*, from what place
do you come ? *non so da qual cosa*, or *d' onde ciò pro-
céda*, I do not know from what it proceeds.

IV. Generally before names of Empires, Kingdoms,
* Provinces, Cities, Villages, &c. as *di Germánia*, of
Germany ; *di Fráncia*, of France ; *d' Inghiltérra*, of
England ; *di Londra*, of London ; *di Firénze*, of Flo-
rence ; *Duca di Parma*, Duke of Parma ; *Príncipe di
Mónaco*, Prince of Monaco.

V. Before adverbs and prepositions ; as *di dove sei ?*
what countryman are you ? *da dove viéni ?* where do
you come from ? *di più*, of more ; *non dico nè di sì*,
nè di no, I say neither yes nor no ; *di diétro*, behind ;
di rimpétto, facing.

VI. Before a verb ; as *penso di fare ciò*, I think to
do that ; *non dico di crédere*, I do not say to believe ;
parmi di vedére, it seems to me to see.

VII. In

* Nouns of Nations as already stated, admit also before
them the definite article ; as *La Fráncia*, *della Fráncia* ;
La Germánia, *della Germánia*, &c.

VII. In some instances, after the verbs *éssere*, to be; *fare*, to do; as *è di mestieri*, it is necessary; *fa di mestieri*, or *fa d'uopo*, it must.

But to exemplify all the instances in which the indefinite articles are used would be too long. At present it will be sufficient to observe, that *DI* takes an apostrophe, when before a vowel, as *parlo d'Antonio*, I speak of Anthony; *un libro d'amore*, a book of love. *A* followed by a vowel, takes a *D*, for the sake of a better sound, as *ad un amico*, to a friend; *ad Andréa*, to Andrew; *DA* does not admit of an apostrophe, because in that case no difference would remain between *DI* and *DA*.

When the articles suffer an elision.

Examples of some Nouns with a Numeral and Partitive Article.

<i>Un uómo astúto</i>	A cunning man.	Numeral Article.
<i>D' un uómo astúto</i>	Of a, &c.	
<i>A or ad un uómo astúto</i>	To a, &c.	
<i>Dá un uómo astúto</i>	From a, &c.	Partitive Article.
<i>Una donna scioperáta</i>	An idle woman.	
<i>D' una donna scioperáta</i>	Of an, &c.	
<i>A or ad una donna scioperáta</i>	To an, &c.	
<i>Da una donna scioperáta</i>	From an, &c.	

This article is used to signify that some part only of the whole kind and species, or number of things are meant, and it is but the possessive case of the definite article singular or plural, masculine or feminine; as *dátemi del pane*, give me some bread; *portátemi della carne*, bring me some meat; *veggo degli uccelli*, I see some birds; *vi porto delle calze*, I bring you

you some stockings; *scorgo degli uómini e delle donne*, I perceive some men and some women; which is the same as to say, *veggo alcúni uccélli; pórtovi alcúne calze; scorgo alcúni uómini, ed alcúne donne, &c.*

Sometimes we omit the partitive article, and say *io mángio carne tutti i giórni*, I eat flesh meat every day; *egli beve vino e birra*, he drinks wine and beer, instead of *mángio della carne, &c. beve del vino e della birra* *.

It is worth observing, that *some*, when before a verb, which indicates the action of eating, or drinking, is expressed in Italian by the preposition, or indefinite article *DA*, as give me some supper, *dátemi da cena*; some dinner, *da desinàre*; some drink, *da bere*; something to eat, *da mangiàre*, or *quálche cosa da mangiàre*.

EXERCISES.

A muff; a powder-box; a bed-chamber; an ox;
manicótto scátola da cipria cámara di letto bué
some

* The advantage that the Italian language has over the Latin by the means of its Articles, deserves to be noticed. The Latins, for instance, say *vinum bibere*; in Italian we say that in three different manners, having each of them a different signification: as *bere vino, bere il vino, bere del vino*. The first manner means only that one does not abstain himself from drinking wine. The second means to drink all the wine: The third means to drink some quantity of wine. These different significations are confounded by the Latins, and in some other languages, for want of proper Articles.

some oxen; a girl; some girls; some silk; some

buoi ragazza

seta

linen; some salt; some money; some silver buckles;

biancheria sale

denáro

fibbia d'argénto

some glasses; some veal; some partridges; I drink

bicchiere

vitello

pernice io bevo

always water; I hear some women quarrel; I

sempre acqua ascolto

donne

querelare io

never eat fruit.

non mangio mai frutto.

Finally take notice, that the following forms of speech in the English language are expressed in Italian in the manner here exemplified.

The king's son

Il figlio del re

My brother's wife

La moglie di mio fratello

The queen's coach

La carozza della regina

My father's house

La casa di mio padre

The king's son, &c.

A wine glass, &c.

A silver dish, &c.

To play upon the violin, &c.

How translated in Italian.

EXERCISES.

My master's horse, my servant's gloves, my friend's

mio padrone cavallo serva guánto amico

books, my uncle's son.

libro zio figlio.

A wine glass

Un bicchiér da vino

A tobacco box

Una scátola da tabacco

A wine flask

Un fiásco da vino

EXERCISES.

Sallad oil; a coach horse; a fire shovel; a night cap.

insaláta óglio, carózza cavallo, fuóco palétta, notte berrétta.

A silver

A silver dish	<i>Un piátto d' argénto</i>
A brick house	<i>Una casa di mattóni</i>
A Holland shirt	<i>Una camíccia di tela d' Olánda</i>
Brass money	<i>Monéta di rame</i>

EXERCISES.

A scarlet cloak, silk stockings, a wooden box, a
scarlátto mantéllò, seta calzétta legno cassa
 horn comb, a gold ring.
corno péttine oro anéllo.

To play upon the violin	<i>Sonár del violíno</i>
To play upon the guitar	<i>Sonár della chitárra</i>
To play at cards	<i>Giucár alle carte</i>
To play at piquet	<i>Giucár a pichétto</i>

EXERCISES.

To play on the spinet, to play upon the harpsichord,
spinétta gravicémbalo
 To play at tennis, at ombra, at bowls.
palla a corda, ombre bóccia.

LECTURE VII.

On the Degrees of Comparison, and on Superlative Nouns.

In what
manner ad-
jectives
form their
compara-
tives.

All Adjectives form their comparatives by two adverbs of quantity, viz. *più*, more; *meno*, less; as *brutto*, ugly; *più brutto*, *meno brutto*; *prudénte*, prudent, *più prudénte*, *meno prudénte*, and so on, &c.

The

The English comparative particles, *as much as*, *so*, *so as*, or the like, are expressed in the Italian by *quánto*, *Much as, so, so as*, how expressed in Italian. or *come*, * as *il mio palázzo non è grande quánto*, or *come il vostro*, my palace is not so large as yours; *le donne non sono scortési quánto*, or *come gli uómini*, women are not so rude as men; *voi siéte grande quánto lui*, or *come lui*, you are as tall as him.

To increase more the degrees of comparison, we make use of *molto più*, *assái più*, or *assái meglio*, *via più*, or *vie più*, or *vie meglio*, viz. much more, or a great deal more, or far better; as *Ciceróne era assái più eloquénte di Orténsio*, Cicero was a great deal more eloquent than Hortensius; *il sole è via, or vie più grande della terra*, the sun is a great deal larger than the earth.

To diminish the degrees of comparison we have recourse to the words *molto meno*, *assái meno*, *via*, or *vie meno*, a great deal or much less; as *'Ariósto è assái meno*, or *via meno corréto del Tasso*, Ariosto is a great deal less correct than Tasso; *Pompéo è molto meno stimáto di Césare*, Pompey is much less esteemed than Cæsar.

The English comparative particle *than*, or *than the*, may be translated in Italian in three ways:

- I. By the definite article of the possessive case.
- II. By the indefinite of the same case.
- III. By *che*.

If the word *than* is followed by a noun, which in Italian

Adverbs which increase the degrees of comparison.

Adverbs which diminish the degrees, &c.

Than, or *than the*, may be translated in three different ways.

* We make also use of the following expressions, viz. *si*, or *così*, *tanto*, or *altrettánto*; as *mio fratéllo è si*, or *così*, *tanto*, or *altrettánto dotto*, *quánto il vostro*, my brother is as learned as yours.

When expressed by *del, dello, della, &c.*

Italian takes the definite article, it must be expressed by *del* or *dello, della, dei, or de', degli, delle*, according to the kind of noun following; as the scholar is more learned *than* the master, *lo scoláre è piu dotto del maés-tro*; it is brighter *than* the looking-glass, *egli è più lucénte dello spécchio*, plural; *degli specchi*; your hands are more white *than* snow, *le vostre mani sono piu bián-che della neve*, plural, *delle nevi*; your book is bigger *than* mine, *il vostro libro è più grande del mio*, plural, * *de' miei*.

When translated by *DI*.

If *than* is followed by a noun, which requires the indefinite article, then it is translated by *DI*, as Anthony is more cunning *than* Peter, *António è più astúto di Piétro*; Mary is more modest *than* you; *Maria è più modésta di voi*. This house is handsomer *than* that, *quésta casa è piu bella di quélla*; London is larger *than* Constantinople; *Londra è più grande di Costantinópolis*. But if immediately after *than* there is an adverb, an adjective, or a verb, *than* is to be expressed by *che*; as *è meglio oggi che dománi*, it is better to-day, *than* to-morrow, *ella è piu graziósa, che bella*, she is more graceful *than* handsome, *io scrivo più che non parlo*, I write more *than* I speak. †

Than expressed by *che*.

There are some words which are comparatives by themselves without any additional particle; as *maggioré*

* Before the possessive nouns *my* or *mine*, *thy* or *thine*, &c. is prefixed in Italian the definite article, as will be shewn in its proper place.

† *Than* is also rendered by *che* when the comparison is made between two substantives; as he is a better general *than* soldier, *egli è miglior générale, che soldáto*; I am more poor *than* rich, *io sono più póvero, che ricco*.

gióre, greater; *minóre*, less; *superióre*, superior; *inferióre*, inferior; *miglióre* or *méglio*, better; *peggióre* or *péggio*, worse; which become plural by changing *E* into *I*, according to the general rule; and are of both genders, except *péggio* and *méglio*; which are indeclinable.

Nouns which are comparative without any additional particle.

EXERCISES.

On the Comparatives.

Germany is larger and more powerful than Italy;

Germánia è grande poténte Itália

Julia is more handsome than, or as handsome as, or less

Giúglia bello

handsome than Mary; Virgil wrote more than any

María Virgílio scrisse qualunque

other poet of his time; your sister's hands are whiter

altro poeta suo tempo vostro sorélla mano sono biáncó

than alabaster; she is wiser, or as wise as, or less

alabástro ella è sággio

wise than me; Milton was much more learned than

Miltóne era dotto

Dante; London is far better paved than Paris;

Dante Londra lastricáto Parígi

Venice is much less populous than Naples; the female

Venézia popoláto Nápoli feminále

sex is much more genteel than the masculine; rather

gentile mascolíno piuttósto

a little than nothing; he is more weak than strong;

un puóco nulla débole forte

it is better to study than be idle; he is a better captain

egli è studiáre stare ozióso egli è capitáno

than soldier; it is more white than yellow.

soldáto biáncó giallo.

Of Superlative Nouns.

There are different ways of expressing the superlatives in Italian.

Superlatives of comparison as *il più bello*, &c.

I. By putting the article *Il* before the comparative, as *il più bello*, the most handsome, or the handsomer; *il più grande*, the greatest; *il meno dotto*, the least learned, &c. which may be called *superlatives of comparison*.

Absolute superlatives as *bruttissimo* or *saluberrimo*,

II. By taking away the last vowel of the adjective and adding *issimo*, as, from *brutto*, *bruttissimo*, very or extremely ugly; from *bello*, *bellissimo*, extremely, or infinitely handsome.* Some few take also the termination in *errimo*, as *celeberrimo*; from *cèlebre*, renowned; *integerrimo*, from *integro*; just; *saluberrimo*, from *salubre*, wholesome; which are called *absolute superlatives*.†

III. Other superlatives are formed either by the repetition of the adjectives, as *un uómo virtuoso virtuoso*

* The scholar ought to be particularly mindful in observing that the termination in *issimo*, serves in Italian to the formation of that kind of superlatives called *absolute*, and they can never be translated in English by those superlatives ending in *st*, or *est*, which are of the *relative* kind, and translated in Italian, by the mere adjectives preceded by *il più*, *la più*, &c. as the shortest poem, *il più corto poema*, not *cortissimo poema*; a very great man, *un grandissimo uómo*, not *il piu grand uómo*.

† Many of the superlative adverbs are composed by changing the last vowel of the superlative into *amente*, as from *ricchissimo*, very rich; *ricchissimamente*, richly; *felicissimo*, very happy; *felicissimamente*, happily.

tuoso, a very virtuous man ; * or by putting an adjective before a superlative, as *fa bello bellissimo* (*tempo* is understood) it is fine, extremely fine weather ; *fa caldo caldissimo*, or *freddo freddissimo*, it is hot, exceedingly hot, or cold, extremely cold weather, which are called *superlatives of exaggeration* ; such superlatives may also be translated in English, by some other expressions, as *very, incomparable, exceeding, infinitely, or vastly, &c.*

Superlatives of exaggeration, as *fa caldo, caldissimo, &c.*

The adjectives *mássimo*, greatest ; *ménomo*, least ; *sommo*, *sovráno*, or *suprémo*, highest, or supreme ; *óttimo*, perfectly good, &c. are superlatives without any addition, or alteration.

Mássimo ottimo, &c. are superlatives without any alteration.

Exercises on the Superlatives.

The most proud of men ; the most pernicious of
orgoglioso uómo ; pericoloso

all crimes ; those that seem to be the most ingenious,
tutto delitto ; quíi sembrano éssere ingegnoso,

are not always the most learned ; he is very humour-
sono non sempre dotto ; egli è fantás-

sive ; she was extremely unhappy ; they have been
tico ; ella era infelice ; églino sono stati

extremely civil, and vastly prodigal ; God is infi-
civile, e prodigo ; Dio è

nitely just ; yesterday it was exceedingly cold, and
giústo ; ieri era freddo, e

H 2

very

* *Elle (forélleno) si vorrébbero vive vive méttet nel fuóco,*
 they would commit themselves quite alive to the flames.

very foggy weather; she is exceeding good; this is
nebbioso tempo; ella è *buono; questo è*
 the handsomest work of your hands.

bello ópera vostro mano.

LECTURE VIII.

On Diminutive, Augmentative, and Collective Nouns.

The most part of the Italian nouns form others of themselves, which diminish or enlarge the signification by some particular terminations, which are quite peculiar to the Italian language, and add to it a great number of tender, as well as significant expressions.

Diminutives in *ino*,
etto, *ello*,
 &c.

The terminations of the diminutives are the following, viz. *Ino*, *Etto* *Ello*, for masculine nouns, *Ina*, *Etta*, *Elle*, for feminine, and they express the objects as small, yet with tenderness, kindness, or wheedling. For instance, from *vecchio*, we form *vecchino*, *vecchiétto*, *vecchiaréllo*, which signifies a poor good old man; and *vecchina*, *vecchiétta*, *vecchiarélla*, a poor good old woman; from *póvero*, *poverino*, *poverétto*, *poveréllo*, a poor good honest man; and *poverina*, *poverétta*, *poverélla*, a poor good honest woman; from *príncipe*, is formed *principino*, a young prince, or a little pretty prince; *principina*, a young princess, or a little pretty princess; from *bastone*, *bastoncéllo*, or *bastoncino*, a little, or a pretty little stick; from *libro* *librétto*, *librettino*, or *libricino*, a little, or a pretty little book; from *cane*, *canino*, *cagnétto*, or *cagnuolino*, a little, or a pretty little dog; from *dama* is formed *damigella*, or *damigellina*, a little, or a young pretty lady.

Some

Some adverbs have likewise their diminutives ; as *benino*, from *bene*, tolerably well ; *adaggino*, from *adagio*, pretty slowly ; *pochino*, or *pocolino*, from *poco*, or *puoco* ; rather little.

Adverbs have their diminutives, &c.

Other terminations generally expressing contempt, compassion, or mockery are in *Uzzo*, *Uccio* *Uolo*, *Avolo*, *Onzolo*, *Atolo*, or *Astro* ; as from *vecchio* ; *vecchiuzzo*, or *vecchiuolo*, a poor old feilow ; *vecchiuzza*, or *vecchiuola*, a poor old woman ; from *uomo*, *uomuccio*, *uomuzzo*, *uomicciuolo*, *uomicciatolo*, a little neat man, or poor insignificant man ; from *donna* *donnuccia*, *donnuzza*, *donnicciuola*, or *donnicciatola*, a little neat, or a poor insignificant woman ; from *medico*, *medicuccio*, *mediconzolo*, a bad little physician.

Terminations in *uzzo*, *uccio*, *uolo*, *avolo*, *onzolo*, &c.

The termination in *Astro*, gives an idea of great contempt ; as from *girovine*, *giovinaastro*, a debauchee ; from *filosofo*, *filosofastro*, a bad philosopher, or philosophaster ; from *medico* *medicastro*, a medicaster, or an ignorant physician, which in Italian are called *peggiorativi*.

A few in *astro* called *peggiorativi*.

It must be observed, that some nouns of feminine gender become masculine, in taking the termination in *Ino*, as from *camera*, chamber ; *camerino*, instead of *camerina*, a little chamber, or a closet ; from *casa*, *casino*, instead of *casina*, a little house.

Camerino *casino*, instead of *camerina*, *casina*, &c.

The terminations of the augmentatives are generally in *Otto*, *One*, *Accio*, for the masculine, in *Otta*, *Ona*, *Accia*, for the feminine, as *ragazzo*, *ragazzotto*, or *ragazzone*, a big boy ; *ragazza*, *ragazzotta*, *ragazzona*, a big girl ; *palazzo*, *palazzone*, a great or a handsome palace ;

Augmentatives in *otto*, *one*, *accio*, &c.

palace; *cámara, cameróne*, a large fine chamber;* *vecchio, vecchiaccio*, a troublesome old woman; *vecchiaccia*, a troublesome old woman; *casa, casaccia*, a bad compacted house; *libro, libraccio*, a great good for nothing book.

Note. The terminations in *Otto, Otta, One, Ona*, augment the signification of nouns, representing them as great or large, without the least meaning, either of scorn or contempt; but the termination in *Accio* generally represents them in a very contemptible light.

It is to be observed, that all nouns are not capable of the above terminations, and the exact knowledge of which termination should be used, can only be acquired by practice, as no perfect rule can be given to direct the scholar.

The *collective nouns* which serve to express a quantity or abundance of any thing, have the termination in *Ame*; as from *carne, carnáme*, quantity of meat;

* *Stanzóne*, or *cameróne*, a large room; *portóne*, a large door; *casóne*, a great house; *donnóne*, a stout manly woman, are masculine, though the nouns, from whence they are formed be feminine.

Tu sei un bel donnóne.

Da non trovár nella tua beltà fondo Berni

Thou art a fine masculine woman, 'the extent of thy beauty is not to be measured.

Sonáte il campanóne ecco il consiglio,

Delle vedove, ch' entra Buonaroti

Ring the great bell, behold the assembly of the widows which enter.

The terminations in *accio*, represent the object in a disrespectful sense.

Collective nouns end in *ame*.

meat; *osso ossáme*, a heap of bones; *legno, legnáme*, a quantity of wood; *gente, gentáme*, an abundance of people; *uccello, uccelláme*, a quantity of birds; *béstia bestiáme*, a great number of cattle. ♣

Some others ending in *Agli*a, are generally taken in a vile and despicable meaning; as from *plebe*, *plebáglia*, the scum of the people; *sbirro*, *sbirrágli*a, the whole body of catchpoles; *gente*, *gentágli*a, the riff-raff of the people.

Take notice that collective nouns in the singular, never or seldom agree with a plural, as they often do in English. We generally say, *il pópolo è numeroso*, people is numerous; not are numerous; *la gente si lagna*, people complains, not complain.*

Remarkson
collective
nouns.

EXERCISES.

A little boy, a little girl, a little pretty creature,
ragazzo ragázza creatúra
 a pretty little house, a young hare, a little cap;
casa lepre berrétta
 a very small brook, a pretty little woman, a little
ruscéllo donna
 table, a vulgar woman, a large house, small rain,
távola pióggia
 a great

* Villani who wrote *l'ingrato pópolo di Bológnna non l'avéano a fare*, is not to be followed.

The ungrateful people of Bologn, ought not to do so,

Veneroni in this, as well as in many other instances, is likewise wrong.

a great large hall, a great large hat, a great ugly
sala cappello
 hat, wicked people, or very despicable people,
gente
 grossly iniquitous, a paltry poet, a smatterer in
ribaldo poeta
 philosophy, a great quantity of poultry, a quantity
filosofo pollo
 of meat, the mobility of the people.
gente

LECTURE IX.

On the Numerical Nouns,

Division of
the Nume-
rical Nouns.

These Nouns may be divided into Numeral, Or-
dinal, and Distributive.

Of Numerals.

Numeral
Nouns.

un
uno
una
un' } one

due two
tre three

quattro four

cinque five

sei six

sette seven

otto eight

nove nine

dieci ten

undici eleven

dodici twelve

trédici thirteen

quatórdici fourteen

quíndici fifteen

sédici sixteen

diciasétte

or

diecisétte

} seventeen

diciótto

or

dieciótto

} eighteen

diciannóve

or

diecinóve

} nineteen

venti

twenty

ventúno

twenty-one

ventidúe

<i>ventidue</i>	twenty-two	<i>cento</i>	a hundred
<i>trenta</i>	thirty	<i>dugento</i>	} two hundred
<i>quaranta</i>	forty	or	
<i>cinquanta</i>	fifty	<i>duecento</i>	
<i>sessanta</i>	sixty	<i>trecento</i>	three hundred
<i>settanta</i>	seventy	<i>mille</i>	a thousand
<i>ottanta</i>	eighty	<i>due mila</i>	two thousand
<i>novanta</i>	} ninety	<i>milióne</i>	a million
or		<i>due milióni</i>	two million
<i>nonanta</i>			

Of Ordinal Nouns.

<i>primo</i>	first	<i>quintodécimo</i>	} fifteenth	Ordinal.
<i>secondo</i>	second	or		
<i>terzo</i>	third	<i>decimoquinto</i>		
<i>quarto</i>	fourth	or	} sixteenth	
<i>quinto</i>	fifth	<i>quindicésimo</i>		
<i>sesto</i>	sixth	or		
<i>settimo</i>	seventh	<i>decimosesto</i>	} seventeenth	
<i>ottavo</i>	eighth	<i>diciassetésimo</i>		
<i>nono</i>	ninth	or		
<i>décimo</i>	tenth	<i>decimo settimo</i>	} eighteenth	
<i>undécimo</i>	eleventh	<i>diciottésimo</i>		
<i>duodécimo</i>	twelfth	or		
<i>terzo décimo</i>	} thirteenth	<i>decimo ottavo</i>	} nineteenth	
or		<i>diciannovésimo</i>		
<i>decimo terzo</i>		or		
or	} fourteenth	<i>decimonono</i>	} twentieth	
<i>tredicésimo</i>		<i>ventésimo</i>		
<i>quartodécimo</i>		or		
or	} twentieth	<i>vigésimo</i>	} twenty-first	
<i>decimo quarto</i>		<i>ventésimo primo</i>		
or		<i>trentésimo</i>		
<i>quattordicésimo</i>	} thirtieth	or	} quar-	
		<i>trigésimo</i>		
		I		

Distribu- tive.	<i>quarantésimo</i>	fortieth	<i>noventésimo</i>	} ninetieth
	<i>cinquantésimo</i>	fiftieth	or	
	<i>sessantésimo</i>	sixtieth	<i>nonantésimo</i>	
	<i>settantésimo</i>	seventieth	<i>centésimo</i>	hundredth
	<i>ottantésimo</i>	eightieth	<i>ducentésimo</i>	two hundred
			<i>millésimo</i>	a thousand
	<i>ambo</i>	} both	<i>una ventína</i>	a score
	<i>ambi</i>		<i>una trentína</i>	a score and a half
	<i>ambidúe</i>		<i>una quarantína</i>	two scores
	<i>amendúe</i>		<i>un centináio</i>	} five scores
	<i>ambe</i>		or	
	<i>ambedúe</i>		<i>centináro</i>	
	<i>un páio</i>	} a pair	<i>un migliáio</i>	} a thousand
	or		or	
	<i>paro</i>		<i>migliáro</i>	
	<i>una decína</i>	half a score	<i>ad uno ad uno</i>	one by one
	<i>una dozzína</i>	} a dozen	<i>a due a due *</i>	two by two
	or			
	<i>dodicína</i>			

Some Observations on the above Nouns.

Un is used before a masculine noun beginning with a consonant; as *un libro*, one book; *un giòrno*, one day.

Uno

* The proportional numbers are the following: *Sémplice*, single; *dóppio*, double; *triplicáto*, three-fold; *quadruplicáto*, four-fold, &c. *centuplicáto*, a hundred fold. In Italian Ordinal Numbers cannot be formed into adverbs, except *primieraménte*, *secondariaménte*; and to express *thirdly*, *fourthly*, they say *in terzo luógo*; *in quáрто luógo*, &c. viz. in the third place in the fourth place, &c.

Uno is placed before a masculine noun, beginning with an *s*, followed by another consonant; as *uno spécchio*, one looking-glass; *uno stroménto*, one instrument.

Una before a feminine noun beginning with a consonant; as *una tavola*, one table; *una signóra*, one lady.

Un' with an apostrophe is put before a masculine or feminine noun beginning with a vowel; as *un' uómo*, one man; *un' ánima*, one soul. *

In poetry we often meet with *duo* and *dui* instead of *due*, as in Petrarca; *lo splendór ferí gli occhi ai duo fratelli*; the splendor struck the eyes of the two brothers; *nè méglío s' accopiáro unqu' altri dui*: Ariosto, nor never were two people more happily joined together.

Duo and *dui* instead of *due*.

In English it is said, one and twenty, two and twenty, *uno e venti*, *due e venti*; but in Italian we always say twenty-one, twenty-two, *ventúno*, *ventidúe*, &c. Observe that when the numbers *ventúno* *trentúno*, &c. precede a substantive, this substantive is always singular, contrary to the English Grammar; as twenty-one crowns, *ventúno scudo*, not *scudi*; one and twenty years, *ventún' anno*, not *anni*; thirty-one chambers, *trentúna cámara*, not *cámere*. But when the number follows the substantive, then it must be in the plural; as *anni ventúno*; *cámere trentúna*. †

we say *ventúno* not *uno e venti*.

Ventúno *scudo*, not *scudi*.
twenty-one crown, not crowns.

Before hundred, *cento*, thousand, *mille*; in English they put the article, or a numeral noun, and say, *a*, *one*, *cento*, *mille*, not *un cento*, *un mille*.

* The same must be observed, when *un*, *uno*, *una*; *un'* answer to the English Article, *a*, or *an*,

† *Ténnemi amóre anni ventúno ardéndo*, Petr. Love inflamed my heart for twenty-one years.

one, or *an* hundred; *a*, or *one* thousand: In Italian such article, or numeral noun, must be suppressed.*

Mille e
cento not
undeci cen-
to, &c.

They say likewise eleven *hundred*, twelve *hundred*, &c. as they do in French; in Italian it is to be said *mille e cento*; *mille e duecento*, thousand and hundred, thousand and two hundred.†

Remarks on
some nouns
of measure
number and
weight.

In English, nouns of measure, number and weight are sometimes joined in the singular form, with numeral adjectives denoting plurality; as *fifty foot*, *six score*; ten thousand *fathom* deep; about an hundred *pound* weight. In Italian such nouns must always be put into the plural form, and say *cinquanta pièdi* (feet) *sei ventine* (scores) *dieci mila braccia profondo* (fathoms) *il peso incirca di cento libre* (pounds)

George
Third, not
the Third.

In the following phrase, viz. Lewis *the* Fourteenth, Charles *the* First, and such like, the article is suppressed in Italian. We say *Luigi decimoquarto*, *Carlo primo*; *Giorgio terzo*.

Ambo or
ambi, both.

Ambo is used for both genders and numbers, as *ambo gli occhi*, both eyes; *ambo le mani*, both hands. one may also say *ambi gli occhi*, *ambe le mani*. Both, as it is observable, is followed in Italian by the article, contrary to the English custom.

EXERCISES.

* There are also some other instances in which the article, either indefinite or definite, is not expressed in Italian, as I am *a* bachelor, *sono smogliato*; he was *a* merchant formerly; *era altre volte mercante*; she is born at Paris, the capital city of France, *ella è nata a Parigi città capitale della Francia*.

† *Mille* when preceded by another number makes *mila*, as *due mila*, *sei mila*, &c.

EXERCISES.

On the above Rules.

One and twenty horses; one thousand and fifty-
cavállo;
 one provinces; thirteen hundred soldiers; Lewis the
provincia; *soldáto*; *Luigi*
 Fourteenth was much less admired than Henry the
era *ammiráto* *Arrigo*
 Fourth; William the Third was a great conqueror;
Gugliélmo *grande conquistatóre*;
 A hundred head of Aristotle's friends; three thousand
capo *Aristótile* *amíco*;
 pound sterling; both legs; both ears, &c.
lira *sterlina*; *gamba*; *orecchia*.

LECTURE X.

On Pronouns.

Pronouns, the great variety of which add a peculiar beauty, and precision to the Italian language,* may be divided into *personals* or *primitives*, *conjunctives*, or *derivatives*, *possessives*, *demonstratives*, *relatives*, *interrogatives*, and *indefinites*.

Of

* In English for want of a sufficient variety of pronouns, chiefly personal pronouns, they are often obliged in a complex sentence, to have recourse to explanations which cannot be introduced without appearing very awkward." (See Dr. Priestley's Rudiments of English Grammar.)

Of the Personals or Primitives.

Personal
pronouns
with their
variations.

<i>Io,</i>	I,	<i>Tu,</i>	Thou
<i>Di me,</i>	Of me,	<i>Di te,</i>	Of thee
<i>A me,</i>	To me,	<i>A te,</i>	To thee
<i>Me,</i>	Me,	<i>Te,</i>	Thée
<i>Da me,</i>	From me,	<i>Da te,</i>	From thee
<i>Egli</i>	He,	<i>Ella,</i>	She
<i>Di lui,</i>	Of him,	<i>Di lei,</i>	Of her
<i>A lui,</i>	To him,	<i>A lei,</i>	To her
<i>Lui,</i>	Him,	<i>Lei,</i>	Her
<i>Da lui,</i>	From him,	<i>Da lei</i>	From her
<i>Noi,</i>	We,	<i>Voi,</i>	You
<i>Di noi,</i>	Of us,	<i>Di voi,</i>	Of you
<i>A noi,</i>	To us,	<i>A voi,</i>	To you
<i>Noi,</i>	Us,	<i>Voi,</i>	You
<i>Da noi,</i>	From us,	<i>Da voi,</i>	From you
<i>Eglino,</i>	They,	<i>Elleno,</i>	They
<i>Di loro,</i>	Of them,	<i>Di loro,</i>	Of them
<i>A loro,</i>	To them,	<i>A loro,</i>	To them
<i>Loro,</i>	Them,	<i>Loro,</i>	Them
<i>Da loro,</i>	From them,	<i>Da loro</i>	From them

Remarks on these Pronouns.

Io abridged.

Io is often abridged both in verse and in prose, as *i'parlo sempre di voi*, I always speak of you; *tu di ch' i' son crudele* Guarini, thou saith that I am cruel.

Io twice
repeated.

Io twice repeated with elegance, as in Boccaccio, *qual donna canterà, s' i' non canto io*, what woman will sing if I don't sing.

Ello

Ello for *egli*, *elli*, for *églino* ; are used sometimes by poets, as *e rallégrisi il ciél, ov'ello è gito* (Petr) may heaven rejoice, where he is gone; *e veggio ben, quant'elli a schivo m'hanno* (Petr.) I plainly see how much they dislike me.

In poetry
ello for *egli*,
elli, for
églino.

Esso is equivalent to *egli*; *ei* is a retrenchment of *egli*, as *ei mi parlò*, he spoke to me; *e'* with an elision is curtailed from *ei*, as *ed e' si stava in sè tutto raccolto* (Petr.) and he was quite wrapt up in himself.

Esso, ei, e',
equivalent
to *egli*.

Observe that *esso* and *essa*, admit the articles *di, a, da*, and may be applied either to persons or things; and signify *he, she, or it*.

Remarks on
esso, essa.

When *esso* is between the preposition *con*, and the primitive pronouns, as *con esso me, con esso loro, con esso noi*. &c. it has the nature of an adverb, is elegantly used as an expletive, being the same as *con me*, with me; *con loro*, with them; *con noi*, with us, &c.*

Con esso
me, con esso
noi, &c.

The following expressions, viz. *sour'esso il ponte*, upon the bridge; *lungh'esso il fiume*, near the river; *con esso le mani*, with the hands; *con esso i piedi*, with the feet, are now but seldom used.

Sour'esso,
lungh'esso,
&c. are but
little used.

Desso or *dessa* with their plurals (in the nominative case only) are elegantly used, and have more energy than *esso* or *essa*; as *lo veggio, egli è desso*, I see him, it is certainly he; *certo è dessa*, there is no doubt it is she;

Desso,
dessa, ele-
gantly used,
instead of
esso, essa.

Egli or *ella*, are sometimes not personal pronouns, but expletives gracefully used in Italian, as *egli fa freddo*, it is cold; *ella è così*, it is so; *quand'*

Egli or *ella*,
are not al-
ways per-
sonal pro-
nouns.

egli

* *Dì che venga a desinare con esso noi*, desire him to come and dine with us; *cominciano a cantare, e le valli con esso loro rispondono*, they begin to sing, and the vallies echo their songs. Boccaccio.

egli arde il cielo, when heaven shines; *egli vi sono molti*, &c. there are many, &c.

La used for *ella*, *gli* for *egli*.

In the familiar dialect, we often say *la*, instead of *ella*, as *la mi disse*, she told me; and *gli* instead of *egli*, as *gli è grande*, he is tall; but in writing such retrenchments must be avoided.

Lui, lei, loro when erroneously used.

Lui, lei, loro, must be only employed in the oblique cases, and it is a manifest error (chiefly in writing) to make use of them in the nominative case.*

Gli, li, le, when better than *loro*.

Loro, as the object of a verb, is not elegantly used, and instead of it we make use of *gli* or *li* and *le* (them) †

The

* In Tuscany they are not very tenacious of this rule, for they often make use, in common conversation, of *lui* instead of *egli*, *lei* instead of *ella*, and *loro* for *èglino, elleno, essi, esse*.

† *Gli* before a vowel, or before an *s*, followed by another consonant, as *gli amò*, he loved them, instead of *amò loro*; *gli sparse*, &c. he spread to them, &c. for *sparse loro*, &c. *li*, before any consonant; as *li trovò*, *li perdette*, he found them, he lost them; *le*, for the feminine, before a vowel or a consonant whatever; as *egli le odiò*, he hated them; *le compianse*, he complained of them.

Observe that *gli* cannot be used in the dative plural, viz. instead of *a loro*, to them; but it is only equivalent to *a lui*, to him; as *gli parlò*, or *parlò a lui*, he spoke to him. An example of impropriety in the use of the pronoun *gli*, is given in the following phrase; *mio fratello comperava gli augelli, e gli dava la libertà*; it ought to be *dava loro*, &c. my brother bought some birds, and gave them their liberty.

The pronoun *loro*, in the dative case, is elegantly used without the article, as *io dissi loro*, I told them; instead of *dissi a loro*.

The article before *loro*, is elegantly suppressed.

For the sake of elegance, the pronouns *lui, lei, loro*, are sometimes put between the definite article, and substantive; as *il di lui onore*; *il loro coraggio*; his honour; their courage.

Il di lui onore, instead of *l'onore di lui*, &c.

It is very common in Tuscany to say *vo'* and *no'*, instead of *voi, noi*, as *vo' parlate male*, you speak badly; *no' andiamo via*, we go away. In poetry is used *vui*, for *voi*; *nui*, for *noi*, as *facciam noi quel che si può far per nui*, Ariosto. Let us do all that it is in our power to do; *in questo stato son, donna, per vui*, Petrarca; In this situation I am on your account my fair one.

Vo' and *no'* used for *voi, noi*.

Vui, nui for *voi, noi*.

Elle for *élle*, in prose, is quite obsolete; but in poetry is very often used.

Elle for *élle*, is obsolete in prose.

These pronouns, as has been seen, admit of the prepositions before them, as in English: Observe here that instead of *con te*, with thee; *con me*, with me; we elegantly say *teco, meco*.

Teco, for *con te*, *meco*, for *con me*.

Se, one's self, is a reflected pronoun of the third person, that serves indifferently for both genders and numbers, and has no nominative case; as *di se*, of him, her, or them; *a se*, to him, her, or them; *da se*, from him, her, or them. *

Of the reflected pronoun *se*.

K

To

* *Da se*, has also the following meanings, *da se*, viz. *di sua natura*, of his nature, as *pigro da se, ma 'l gran piacer lo sprona*, naturally slow, but the great pleasure stirs him up: *Da se*, or *da per se*, viz. *separatamente*, separately; as *ciascuna delle arti andava da per se*, Villani. *Fuor di se*, signifies to be out of his mind.

Sestésso, or
semedésimo.

Lui stesso,
lei stessa,
&c. instead
of *sestésso*
sestésa, is
quite im-
proper.

To this pronoun, as well as to all personal pronouns, we often add the adjectival pronoun *stesso*, or *medésimo*, himself; as in English is added *own* and *self*, to the pronouns *my*, *our*, *thy*, *your*, &c. to express emphasis or opposition; as *Catóne*, *piuttosto che cadere nelle mani di Césare si uccise*, or *uccise semedésimo*, or *da sestésso si uccise*; Cato rather than fall into the hands of Cesar, killed himself: *la donna è buona in sestésa*, the woman is good in herself†: *lo feci io stesso*, or *lo feci da me medésimo*, I did it my own self, that is no one else.

EXERCISES.

On the above Pronouns.

I speak of me, of thee, of you, of them; thou
parlo
lovest me; he, or she comes near us; we see them
ami *viene vicino* *vediamo*
every day; you can do that for me, for us, for them;
ogni giorno; **potete far ciò*
they are covetous with her, with him; they esteem
sono avaro *stimano*
them very much; she spoke to me, to us several
molto; *parlò* *più*
times; they will stay with us for ever; certainly it is
volte; *staranno* *per sempre*; *certo*
she; I told them twice; I do that for her, not for
dissi *due volte*; *fo* *per*
him;

* Some with great impropriety say in *leistessa*, instead of *sestésa*; in *lui stesso*, for *sestésso*; in *loro stessi*, instead of *sestéssi*.

him ; I will go with them ; I see myself ; it is for her-

anderò

vedo

è

self ; he speaks of himself ; Brutus killed himself.

parla

Bruto uccise

LECTURE XI.

On Conjunctive, or Derivative Pronouns, which are as follows.

Mi, ti, si, ci, or ne, vi, and can only be applied to persons.

Gli, li, lo, il, la, le, ne, which by some Grammarians are also called *relative pronouns*, and may relate to persons, or things.

For the better understanding of these *monosyllables*, which perplex not only the beginners, but even those who have made some proficiency in the Italian language, two points must be considered, viz. their meaning, and their proper place in a sentence.

Meaning of the foregoing Pronouns.

Mi (when dative) is equivalent to *a me* ; as *il Re mi concede tal grázia* (viz. *concede a me* ;) the king grants me such a favour.

Mi is equivalent to *a me* (to me)

Mi (when accusative) is equivalent to *me* ; as *Dio mi vede* (viz. *vede me*) God sees me.

Mi—to *me* (me)

Ti (dative) is equivalent to *a te* ; as *io ti parlerò domani* (viz. *parlerò a te* ;) I will speak to thee to-morrow.

Ti—to *a te*, (to the)

Ti

Ti is equivalent to *te* (to thee)

Ti (accusative) is equivalent to *te*; as *egli ti punirà senza pietà* (viz. *punirà te*;) he will punish thee without mercy.

Si — *a se* (to him, to her, to them)

Si (dative) is equivalent to *a se*; as *si fece chiamare tutti i servi* (viz. *fece chiamare a se*;) he ordered all servants to be called to him.

Si — to *se* (him, her, them)

Si (accusative) is equivalent to *se*; as *chi a legger romànzi, chi a giuocare a scacchi si diède Bocc*; (viz. *se diède*;) some gave themselves up to read romances, some to play at chess.

Ci or *ne* — to *a noi* (to us)

Ci, or *ne*, (dative) is equivalent to *a noi*; as *correranno alle case, e l'avere ci or ne ruberanno Bocc*, (viz. *ruberanno a noi*;) they will run to our house, and steal from us what we have.

Ci or *ne* — to *noi* (us)

Ci, or *ne* (accusative) is equivalent to *noi*; as *voi ci, or ne avete oggi tanto diliticati* (viz. *avete diliticati noi*) Bocc; you have pleased us so much to-day.*

Vi --- to *a voi* (to you)

Vi (dative) is equivalent to *a voi*; as *quando di venire vi piaccia*, (viz. *piaccia a voi*;) when it may please you to come.

Vi --- to *voi* (you)

Vi (accusative) is equivalent to *voi*; as *ella vi attenderà*

* Another example of the use of the Pronoun, *ne*, (which is generally more used in poetry than prose) is to be seen in the following verses:

Che non ambiziosi avári affetti.

Ne spronaro (viz. *noi*) *all'impresa, o ne fur guida.* viz. *a noi*) Tasso.

For ambitious or covetous desires did not move us to this enterprize, nor were our guide.

Perchè con lui cadrà quella speranza.

Che ne fè (viz. *noi*) *vaneggiar sì lungamente*; Petrarca.

For with him that hope shall fall, which made us frantic so long.

tenderà in casa mia (viz. *attenderà voi*;) she will wait for you at my house.

Note, either the sense, or the verb, or both, indicate when any of these pronouns is dative, or accusative.

It is observable, that the conjunctive pronouns do not admit before them any article, as the oblique cases of personal pronouns do; consequently it cannot be said *dí mi, a ci, da gli*; but *di me, a noi, da lui*, and so on.

The conjunctive pronouns do not admit before them any article.

Gli (when dative) is equivalent to *a lui*; as *costei quando tu gli sarai rincresciuta*; (viz. *a lui*) *con gran vitupéro di te medesima ti caccerà via*: Bocc; this man, when he is weary of thee, he will send thee away, to thy great disgrace.

Gli is equivalent to *a lui* (to him or to it)

Gli or *li* (accusative) is equivalent to *loro*; as *egli aveva tre figliuoli, e tutti e tre parimente gli amava*, viz. *amava loro*: Bocc; he had three children, and loved them all equally.*

Gli or *li* --- to *loro* (to them)

Lo or *il* is equivalent to *lui*; as *per lo común bene della Repubblica, lo dichiararono Re, e loro Signóre*: Bocc, (viz. *dichiararono lui*;) for the common good of the Republic, they declared him their king, and their lord. *Cantando con grandissima festa, e solennità il recarono alla chiesa* (viz. *recarono lui*) Bocc; singing with great ceremony, and solemnity, carried him to the church.

Lo or *il* --- to *lui* (him or it)

La is equivalent to *lei*; as *il marito credulo alle altrui falsità la fa uccidere, e mangiar a' lupi*, (viz. *fa uccidere*

La --- to *lei* (her or it)

* *Gli* is the same as *li*; as *li piango notte e dì*: viz. *piango loro*; I weep for them night and day: as has been observed, *gli* is used before a vowel; and *li* before a consonant.

uccidere lei) Bocc; the husband believing the false representations, causes her to be killed, and devoured by wolves.

Le is equivalent to *a* (to her, or to it)

Le (when dative) is equivalent to *a lei*; as *la donna con la sua fante si consigliò, se ben fatto le parésse*, (viz. *parésse a lei*) *ch' ella usásse quel bene, che innánzi le aveva* (viz. *aveva a lei*;) *la fortuna mandato*: Bocc; the woman consulted her servant whether she thought it expedient she should avail herself of that favourable opportunity, which fortune had thrown in her way.

Le --- to loro (them)

Le (when accusative) is equivalent to *loro*; as *la Ninétta, che il desidério delle sorelle sapéva, in tanta volontà di quésto fatto le accése, che, &c.* (viz. *accése loro*) Bocc; Nancy who knew the inclination of her sisters, roused in them such a desire of it, that, &c.

Ne --- to di lui, di lei, or di loro, of him, of her, of them)

Ne is equivalent to *di lui, di lei, or di loro*; as *non mi parli nè del Signór, nè della Signóra N. N. perchè non ne vóglío sapér nulla*, (viz. *non vóglío sapér nulla nè di lui, nè di lei*;) do not speak to me neither of the gentleman, nor of the lady N. N. because I will know nothing of him, of her, or of them. *

Position

* *Ne*, which may be called a general relative pronoun, is also equivalent to *di ciò, di quésto, di quéstá, di quéstí, di quésté*, or *quélle cose*, of it; of that; of them, or some of them; as *la signóra cene parlò* (viz. *ci parlò di ciò, or di quésto*) the lady spoke to us of it; of this; of that. *Mene daréte voi?* (viz. *mi daréte voi di quéstá or quélle cosa*) will you give me some of it; or of that: *portátemene quándo sono matúre*; bring me some of them, when they are ripe.

Position of the foregoing Pronouns.

The Conjunctive and Relative Pronouns are more frequently put before the verb ; as *mi pento, si duòle, vi amo* ; and may also be placed after it ; as *péntomi, duòlsi, ámovi*.

Position of
the Con-
junctive
Pronouns.

The oblique cases of Personal Pronouns may likewise be placed before the verb, as well as after it ; as *io parlo a voi, non a lui*, I speak to you, not to him ; or *a voi parlo, non a lui*. *

This point will be further elucidated by the following Examples :

ella mi piáce di molto
ella piátemi di molto
ella piáce a me di molto
or, *a me piáce, &c.*

} she pleases me very
much.

egli mi desidera assái
egli desiderami assái
egli desidera me assái

} he wishes for me very
much.

io gli diédi un libro
io diédigli un libro
io diédi a lui un libro,
or, *a lui diédi, &c.*

} I gave him a book.

io lo vedo benissimo
io védolo benissimo
io vedo lui benissimo

} I see him very well.

Examples
by which is
shewn, that
Pronouns
may be put
either before
or after the
verb.

It

Ne sometimes is an adverb of place ; as *ne vengo ora* (viz. *vengo ora da quel luógo*) I come now from that place, or from there.

Nè, when accented, it means *neither* or *not* ; as *io non posso nè parláre nè tacére* ; I can neither speak nor be silent.

* The pronoun *loro* is always placed after the verb ; as *rispondo loro*, or *a loro*, I answer them.

It is observable, when the conjunctive pronoun is placed after the verb, it makes but one word with it.

The Pronoun *si* must be placed after the other Pronouns,

Take notice, that the pronoun *Si* is always placed immediately after other pronouns; as *misi, tisi, gli, or le si, cisi, &c.* example; *misi vuol dare a credere*; they will make me believe: *tisi diéde interamente*; he devoted himself intirely to thee; *gli or le si dice*, they tell him or her: *cisi attribuisce*, they attribute to us, &c.

Mi must precede all other Pronouns.

Mi precedes all other pronouns; as *miti, mici, misi, &c.* example; *miti abbandono*, I abandon myself to thee; *mici fermái un ora*, I stopped there an hour: *misi presenta alla vista un órrido aspétto*, it presents to my sight an horrid aspect.

Ti and *vi* precede the Pronoun *ci*.

Ti and *vi* are put before *ci*; as *tici, vici, &c.* example: *tici vidi due volte*, I have seen thee there twice: *vici condússi contra mia vóglia*, I lead you there against my will.

Ci and *vi* are sometimes adverbs of place.

In some of these instances *ci* and *vi* are not pronouns, as is evident, but adverbs of place.

In the common style the Pronouns are placed before the verb.

It will probably be here asked, if the above mentioned different ways of placing the Conjunctive Pronouns are all equally good; or if one is better than the other. To this question it may be answered; The first manner, viz. *mi piáce* is more frequently used, and is the best in common conversation. The second, viz. *piácermi*, is more proper for the elegant style. The third, viz. *piáce a me*, or *desídera me*, is generally more expressive and emphatic.

In the elegant style are placed after them.

It must be observed, that when there are two or more pronouns in a sentence; as *Páolo loda te, e biasima me*, Paul praises thee, and blames me; *il giúdice condánna voi, e assólve me*, the judge condemns you and

and absolves me ; they are in general placed after the verb.

But in many instances, the sound, harmony, and energy of the phrase must in a great measure direct the reader's taste.

Exceptions on the above Rules.

There are three cases, in which the Conjunctive or Relative Pronouns are placed after the verb, viz. after the *imperative, infinite, gerund*; and also after the adverb *ecco* ; as *fermátevi*, stop ; a *dirla*,* to tell it ; *abbandonándolo alla sorte*, in leaving him to the chance ; *éccomi*, here I am ; *éccolo*, here he is.

In what instances these Pro. nouns are put after the verbs.

But if the *negative particle* precedes the above tenses, the learner is at liberty to put the pronoun before the verb ; as *non mi scrívete*, do not write to me ; *non mi scrívendo*, not writing to me ; *non mi scrivere punto*, not write to me at all.

EXERCISES.

Tell me that ; God sees thee ; I like you ; he choosed
dite ciò Dio vede amo scelse
 us ; believe me ; I gave him the book ; she speaks to
credéte diédi libro parla
 L me,

* Observe here, that the last vowel of all infinite verbs is always cut off, when there is after them a pronoun ; consequently it must not be said, *diréla amarelo, farene vederela* ; but *dirla amárlo, to love him ; fárne, to do it ; vedér-la, to see her.*

me, not to you ; they see him ; speak to us the truth ;
non vèdono dite vero
 I will teach her Italian ; I never spoke to him ; I do
insegnerò Italiáno non ho mai parlato
 not understand them ; she will give you the letter ;
capisco darà lettera
 the king grants us such a favour ; they devoted them-
re concède tal favóre dièdero
 selves to you ; give me some bread ; to tell you the
date pane
 thing as it is ; in leaving me alone ; here we are ;
cosa come è lasciándo solo ecco
 there they are.
ecco.

LECTURE XII:

Some other Important Remarks on the Conjunctive and Relative Pronouns.

In what case
mi, ti ci, &c.
 change *I* in-
 to *E*.

When *mi, ti, si, ci, vi*, are followed, or copulated with the relative pronouns, viz. *lo, la, le, li, ne*, every one of the former must change *I*, into *E*, thus,

Me lo date, do you give me it ; not *mi lo*.

Te la manda, he sends her or it to thee ; not *tila*.

Se lo mette in tasca, he put it in his pocket ; not *silo*.

Ce li mostra come sono, she shows them to us as they are ; not *ci li*.

Ve le pigliáte tutte, do you take them all for yourself not *vi le*.

Note. These pronouns may also be written, as if they were only one word ; thus, *me lo, tela, selo, celi, vele*, &c. which is very often used.

Sometimes

Sometimes *per vezzo di lingua*, for sake of elegance, we say *il vi darò*, I will give you that; instead of *velo darò*; *lavi ho data*, I have given it to you, instead of *vel' ho data*.

Il vi darò elegantly used instead of *velo darò*.

The conjunctive *gli*, to him, or to it, which is likewise copulated with *lo*, *la*, *le*, *li*, does not change *I*, into *E*; but in order to soften the pronunciation it takes an *E* more; as *gliélo*, *gliéla*, *gliéli*, instead of *glilo*, *glila*, *glili*; and in such case *gli* is of both genders, and may signify to him, as well as to her; *Ex. io gliélo inviái,** I sent him, or it to her, or him; viz. *io l'inviái a lei*, or *a lui*; *io gliene parlerò*, I will speak to him, or her of that.

Gli when copulated to another pronoun is of both genders.

When it is requisite to incorporate a conjunctive at the end of verbs, take notice that, if such verbs are accented, or are monosyllables, it is necessary to double the consonant of the pronoun, and write them, as if they were single words, thus, *mmi*, *lli*, *vvi*, &c. and then the accent on the last vowel of the verb, is lost in writing, but not in the pronunciation; as *io dómmitti*, viz. *io miti do*, I devote myself to the; *io dóllo a voi,†* viz. *lo do a voi*, I give it to you; *egli daravvi*

In what case the consonant of pronouns must be doubled thus *Mmi*, *Vvi*, *Lli*, &c.

* This, and other above-mentioned instances show, that the accusative case which is constantly before the dative in English, is placed next to it in Italian.

† *Fammi che puói della tua grázia degno.* Petrarca.

Render me worthy of thy bounty, for it is in thy power.

Ma donde io vógliá incominciár gl' incánti

E con quái modi or narrerótti avànti.

But now I will tell the first of all, from whence I intend to begin my enchantments, and in what manner.

daravvi, viz. *vi darà*, he will give it to you ; *chiamollo*, viz. *lo chiamò*, he called him.

Gli does not suffer any alteration.

Gli is excepted, as *io gli darò il premio*, or *darògli*, &c. I will give to him the price ; where no consonant is doubled.

When these pronouns take an apostrophe.

These pronouns may be apostrophied as has been already observed, when before a vowel, and sometimes before a consonant ; as *mel' ha promesso*, he has promised it to me ; *vel' assicuro*, I assure you of that ; *cel' concede*, he grants us that.

EXERCISES.

You shall send her to me ; he praises himself for it ;
manderète *loda*
 they will give us some of it or of them ; you shall re-
daranno *renderète*
 turn them to him ; the lady spoke to us of it ; she
signóra parlò
 gave it me again ; we shall ask him for some ; a gen-
diède *di nuovo* ; *domanderemo* *si*
 tleman told it to me ; remember it to me ; she lent
gnóre disse *ricordáte* *imprestò*
 them to me.

Before these remarks on pronouns are finished, it may be proper to mention a peculiarity in the Italian language.

Italians either for civility or duty, in addressing each other, very often make use of another third person, which serves for both sexes, viz. *Vostra Signoria*
 or

or *Vossignoria*, and they write it sometimes with two capital letters, thus *V. S.* This is a general title given in speaking to any private lady or gentleman and admits of the articles *di, a, da*, thus,

A title peculiar to the Italian language, viz. *vostra signoria* or *vossignoria*.

<i>Vossignoria</i>	You sir, madam, or miss
<i>Di Vossignoria</i>	Of you, &c.
<i>A Vossignoria</i>	To you, &c.
<i>Da Vossignoria</i>	From you, &c.
<i>Vossignorie</i>	You ladies or gentlemen
<i>Di Vossignorie</i>	Of you, &c.
<i>A Vossignorie</i>	To you, &c.
<i>Da Vossignorie</i>	From you, &c.

To avoid that wo frequent repetition of *Vossignoria*, *ella, di lei, a lei*, or *le, la, da lei*, (for both genders) are made use of.

Ella, &c. instead of *V. S.*

For the plural it is said *le loro signorie*, or *le signorie loro, delle loro signorie, alle loro signorie, dalle loro signorie*, or (in conversation) *loro signóri*, you gentlemen; *loro signóre*, you ladies; *di loro signóri*, or *signóre*, &c.

If it should be asked, whether the adjective in the following phrase, *you sir are very learned* (and in other similar instances) must agree with the *person* who is masculine, or with the title *V. S.*, which is feminine, and consequently which is preferable, *Vossignoria è molto dotto*, or *dotta*.

To this, it is answered, that in the singular it is more correct to make the adjective correspond with the *person*, and say *V S è molto dotto*; but in the plural,

Vossignoria è molto dotto, not *dotta*.

*Le signorie
loro sono
generose,
not gene-
rosi.*

ral, the adjective must agree with the title, as, *le Signorie loro sono molto generose* (not *generosi*), you gentlemen are very generous; *sono molto dotte*, not *dotti*, &c.

Exception.

Observe that if the adjective is applied to a noun of nation, or country, then it must be masculine; as, *le Signorie loro mi paiono Spagnuoli*, or *Italiani* (not *spagnuole*, or *Italiane*) you gentlemen look like Spanish or Italian.

LECTURE XIII.

On the Possessive Pronouns.

Variations
of these
pronouns.

They admit
of the defi-
nite article.

Are the following, viz. *mio, tuo, suo, nostro, vostro*, masculine singular; *mièi, tuoi, suoi, nostri, vostri, loro*, plural; *mia, tua, sua, nostra, vostra*, feminine singular; *mie, tue, sue, nostre, vostre, loro*, plural; my, thy, his, our, your, their, and admit of the definite article, *il la*, &c. contrary to the English custom.

Divided
into con-
junctives,
absolutes
and rela-
tives.

For the clear explanation of these pronouns they are here divided into three classes, viz. into *conjunctives, absolutes, and relatives*.

The *conjunctives* are those which are united to nouns, as *il mio libro*, my book; *i mièi parènti*, my relations.

The *absolutes* are those which are not united to nouns, as *la vostra casa, e la mia*, your house and mine; *I mièi cavalli, ed i vostri*, my horses and yours; *la mia, i vostri* are absolute, as they are not united to a noun.

The

The *relatives* are those which have a relation to a person or thing, which has been spoken of; as *è mio*, or *mia*; it is mine; *sono tuói*, or *tue*, are thine, and in this case they do not admit of the article.

Examples on the Conjunctives.

<i>Il mio libro</i>	My book
<i>Del mio libro</i>	Of my, &c.
<i>Al mio libro</i>	To &c.
<i>Dal mio libro</i>	From, &c.
<i>I miei libri</i>	My books
<i>De' miei libri</i>	Of my, &c.
<i>A' miei libri</i>	To, &c.
<i>Da' miei libri</i>	From, &c.
<i>La nostra cámara</i>	Our chamber.
<i>Della nostra cámara</i>	Of our, &c.
<i>Alla nostra cámara</i>	To, &c.
<i>Dalla nostra cámara</i>	From, &c.
<i>Le nostre camere</i>	Our chambers
<i>Delle nostre camere</i>	Of our, &c.
<i>Alle nostre camere</i>	To, &c.
<i>Dalle nostre camere</i>	From, &c.

Examples on the Absolutes.

<i>Il suo stato, ed il vostro</i>	My state and yours
<i>Del suo stato, e del vostro</i>	Of my, &c.
<i>Al suo stato, ed al vostro</i>	To &c.
<i>Dal suo stato, e dal vostro</i>	From &c.
<i>I suoi stati, ed i vostri</i>	His states and yours
<i>De' suoi stati, e de' vostri</i>	Of his, &c.

<i>A' suoi stati, ed a' vostri</i>	To, &c.
<i>Da' suoi stati, e da' vostri</i>	From, &c.
<i>La vostra casa, e la mia</i>	Your house and mine
<i>Della vostra casa, e della mia</i>	Of your, &c.
<i>Alla vostra casa, e alla mia</i>	To, &c.
<i>Dalla vostra casa, ed alla mia</i>	From, &c.
<i>Le vostre case, e le mie</i>	Your houses and mine
<i>Delle vostre case, e delle mie</i>	Of your, &c.
<i>Alle vostre case, e alle mie</i>	To, &c.
<i>Dalle vostre case, e dalle mie</i>	From, &c.

Examples on the Relatives.

<i>E mio—mia</i>	It is mine
<i>Era tuo—tua</i>	It was thine
<i>Fu suo—sua</i>	It was his or hers
<i>Sarà nostro—nostra</i>	It will be ours
<i>Non può essere vostro—vostra</i>	It cannot be yours
<i>Sono miei—mie</i>	They are mine
<i>Erano tuoi—tue</i>	They were thine
<i>Furono suoi—sue</i>	They were his or hers
<i>Saranno nostri—nostre</i>	They will be ours
<i>Non ponno éssere vostri—vostre</i>	They cannot be yours

EXERCISES.

Thy horses and thy dogs are very good; my action
cavallo cane sono buono; azione
 is not blameable; their watch is always out of order;
non biasimevole oriuolo va sempre male

Their

Their affairs are in a bad state ; your love is false ;

affáre sono in cattívo stato amóre è falso ;

our house is finer than yours ; his coach is not hand-

casa bello carózza bel-

some ; my friends and yours ; your garden is larger

lo amíco giardino grande

than mine ; our servants and theirs ; it is not mine,

servo

but yours ; that box is ours ; do you see that palace,

ma scátola vedéte quél palázzo,

it was mine, &c.

era

Remarks on the Possessive Pronouns.

When these pronouns are immediately* followed by a substantive (in the singular)† which signifies a title of dignity, or kindred, they are declined in the same manner as in English, viz. with the indefinite article, *di, a, da, as, sua Maestà*, his majesty, *di sua Maestá*, of his &c. and so on ; *sua Eccelénza*, his excellency ; *di sua*

These pronouns before nouns of dignity or kindred, reject the article, *il* &c.

M

Eccelénza,

* Immediately followed, &c. because if between the possessive pronoun and substantive there is an adjective, then it takes the definite article ; as *il mio caro fratéllo*, my dear brother ; *la mia affezionáta madre*, my affectionate mother.

† In the singular ; because the exception holds not good in the plural, in which the general rule must be followed, as, *le loro Maestà, delle loro Maestá ; I suói fratélli, de' suói fratélli ; I suói nipóti*, his nephews ; *le vostre nipóti*, your nieces.

Eccelénza, of his &c. *mio padre*, my father, *di mio padre*, of &c. *a tua madre*, to thy mother, *da tua madre*, from thy &c. *suo cugino*, his cousin, *di suo cugino* of &c. *mio nipóte*, *di mio nipóte*, &c.

Suppose the possessive pronoun is transposed after the substantive, in that case it must be said *la Maestà sua* ; *il fratéllo suo* ; *il padre mio*, &c. which is not elegant.

When *than* is expressed by the article *del* or *di*.

Observe likewise that the English particle *than*, when followed by the possessive pronoun, must be expressed by the respective article of the possessive case in Italian, as ; This hat is handsomer *than* mine, *questo cappéllo è più bello del mio* ; your cousin is taller *than* your brother, *vostro cugino è più grande di vostro fratéllo*.

Your is translated by *suo* not *vostro*.

It must also be noticed, that the following manners of speaking, viz. *your book*, *your buckles*, *your watch*, and such like ; when they are spoken with propriety, must be translated not by *il vostro libro*, *le vostre fibbie*, &c. but by *il suo libro* ; *le sue fibbie*, *il suo oriuólo*. Recollect here what has been said in speaking of the *title* peculiar to the Italian tongue, viz. *Vossignoria*, or *sua Signoria*, &c.

One of my friends is translated thus, *one my friend*, &c.

The following sentences, viz. *one of my cousins*, *one of my friends*, *one of my relations*, *one of my servants* and such like, in Italian are commonly expressed thus, *un mio cugino*, *un mio amico*, *un mio parente*, *un mio servo*, viz. *one my cousin*, *one my friend*, &c.

In

In English, as well as in French, the possessive pronouns are more frequently used in a sentence than in Italian, as may be seen by the following phrases ; 1, put this note in *your* pocket ; 2, you will do that at *your* leisure ; 3, he has lost *his* liberty ; 4, put on *your* hat ; 5, being arrived with *his* wife, *his* children, and *his* friends. In all these cases, as well as in many others, the pronoun is suppressed in our language, as 1, *mettete questo viglietto in tasca* ; 2, *voi lo faréte con cómodo* ; 3, *egli ha perdúto la libertà* ; 4, *mettete sù il cappello* ; 5, *giunto colla móglie, coi figli, ed amici*.

Instances in which the possessive pronouns are suppressed, contrary to the English custom.

These pronouns are also suppressed in speaking of the members of the body, as wash *your* hands, *lavatevi le mani* ; I will break *your* head, *vi romperó la testa* ; I have burnt *my* finger, *mi sono bruciáto il dito* ; *my* eyes are sore ; *ho male agli occhi* ; *my* head aches, *mi duóle il capo, or la testa*.

These pronouns are also suppressed in speaking of the members of the body.

When the pronoun possessive is preceded by a pronoun demonstrative, then it admits of no article, as *questo mio libro, di questo mio libro*, not *il questo mio libro, del questo mio libro*.

The poets for the sake of rhyme often use *tui* and *sui*, instead of *tuoi* *suoi*.*

Tui, sui, used for *tuoi, suoi*.

M 2

Some

* *Deh ! non espòr l'oggétto*

Dei dolci affétti tui

All' ódio, al riso, ed agli insúlti altrúi, Metas

Pray do not expose the object of thy sweet affections to the hatred and the insults of others.

Nessúno

The English language labours under an ambiguity, which is unknown in the Italian language.

Some languages, and chiefly the English, as has been hinted, page 61, for want of a sufficient variety of personal pronouns of the third person and their possessives, labour under an ambiguity which is quite unknown in the Italian language. *The eagle killed the hen and eat her in her own nest. He sent him to kill his own father.* Nothing but the sense of preceding sentences can determine what nest, the *hen's*, or the *eagle's*, is meant in the former of these examples; or whose father, his that gave the order, or his that was to execute it, in the latter. In Italian such an ambiguity is very easily avoided. *L'aquila uccise la gallina, e se la mangiò nel suo, or nel di lei proprio nido; nel suo,* if it is meant the *eagle's nest*; *nel di lei,* if it is meant the *hen's nest*. *Egli lo mandò ad uccidere il suo, or il di lui proprio padre;* if it is meant the father of him who gave the order, it must be said *il suo*; but if it is meant the father of him who was to execute the order, *il di lui* must be said.

EXERCISES.

My brother and my sister are gone into the country ; all your brothers and sisters are indisposed ; my
fratello *sorèlla sono andáto in* *cam-*
pagna ; tutto *indispósto ;*
mother

Nessuno é reo

Se basta á falli sui

Per difesa portar l'esempio altrui.

No one is guilty, if it is enough to bring the examples of others, for a defence of one's own crimes.

mother and your cousin will set off to-morrow for
madre cugina partiranno domani.

Paris ; my father is very ill ; your Highness ; his
Parigi ; sta molto male ; Altézza

Majesty ; their Highnesses ; their Excellencies ; our
Maestà ; Eccellenza ;

city is larger than yours ; my rings were finer than
città grande anéllo erano bello

theirs ; your watch madam is very elegant ; your
oriuolo signóra elegánte ;

flowers are beautiful ; that lady is one of my rela-
fióre bellissimo ;

tions ; that gentleman was formerly one of my ene-
rente ; era tempo fa ne-

mies ; he has lost his buckles ; take off your hat ; she
míco ; ha perdúto fibbia cavátevi cappéllo ;

has lost her sight.

vista.

LECTURE XIV.

On the Demonstrative Pronouns.

There are in Italian three sorts of demonstrative pronouns, which variety is peculiar to the Italian amongst the living languages.

One implies a person or a thing which is near us, as *quésto*, this ; (masculine) *quésti*, these ; *quésta*, this (feminine) *quéste*, these ; *costúi*, he or this man ; *costóro*, they or these men ; *costéi*, she or this woman ; *costóro*, they or these women.

The second implies the object at a distance ; as *quél* or *quéllo* (masculine) that, *quíi*, or *què*, *quéllo*, or *quégli*,

In Italian there are three sorts of demonstrative pronouns *quésto*, *quésta*, &c. imply the object near at hand.

Quel, *quello*, &c. at a distance.

quégli, those ; *quélle* (feminine) that, *quélle*, those, *colúì*, he, or that man ; *colóro*, they, or these men ; *coléi*, she, or that woman ; *colóro*, they, or these women.

Cotésto. *co-tésta*, &c. imply the object nearer to him who is spoken to, than to him who speaks.

Of the general pronoun *ciò*.

Costúì, *colúì*, *coléi* &c. when used.

Quésto is equivalent to *latter*; *quéllo*, to *former*.

Stanótte, *stasséra*, for *quésta notte*, *quésta sera*.

The third implies the object nearer to him who is spoken to, than to him who speaks : as *cotésto*, or *codésto*, that man, or thing ; *cotésti*, or *codésti*, those men or things ; *cotésta*, or *codésta*, that woman, or thing ; *cotéste*, or *codéste*, those women or things.

These pronouns take the indefinite article as in English.

The general Neuter Pronoun, *ciò*, this, or that, which is never related to a person, may be added to the above ; it is equivalent to *quésto*, *cotésto* *quél*, *quéllo*, &c. when substantively taken ; as *non fate ciò*, or *non fate quésto*, *quello*, don't do this or that : it signifies also *it* ; as *non posso far ciò*, I cannot do it.

Costúì, *colúì*, *costéi*, *coléi*, *colóro*, cannot be employed but in speaking of a rational substance ; and when they are used in the familiar style, they generally imply a kind of disrespect.

*Quésto** sometimes answers to the English word *latter*; *quéllo* answers to the word *former*; as will be seen in one of the following remarks.

Quésta before some substantives ; as *mane*, or *mat-tína*, morning ; *sera*, evening ; *notte*, night ; often looses its first syllable, and is incorporated with the preceding words ; thus, *stanótte*, *stasséra*, *stamàne*, or *stamattína*.

Cotésto,

* Petrarca, and Dante have *esto* for *quésto* ; as *d' esto ingrato* ; viz. *di quésto ingrato* ; *esta selva*, *esti tormenti*, for *quésta selva*, *quésti tormenti*, this forest, these torments.

Cotesto, cotesti, &c. must never be used, but in speaking of a thing which concerns the person whom it is spoken to; as *codèsta scátola è molto bella*, or *codèsta vostra scátola*, that box, or your box is very handsome; *codèste fibbie*, or *codèste vostre fibbie sono alla moda*, those buckles, or your buckles are fashionable: it would be a manifest error to say, *codèsta mia scátola*, *codèste mie fibbie*, instead of *quèsta*, *quèste*, &c.

Remarks on the proper use of *cotesto*, *cotèsta*, &c.

Take also particular notice, that in writing a letter to a person at Florence, it would be very improper, the writer being in England, and speaking of this kingdom, to make use of *codèsto*, instead of *questo*; because *codèsto* means that kingdom, city, or place, where the person lives, to whom the letter is addressed.

Codèsto erroneously used.

Quél, quéllo, that; *que' quèi, quèlli*,* *quégli*, those. We make use of *quél, que'* or *quèi*, before nouns beginning by a single consonant; of *quéllo*, and *quégli* before nouns which begin by a vowel, or by an *s* followed by another consonant; as *quél fióre*, that flower; *què or quèi fióri*, those flowers; *quéllo strépito*, that noise; *quégli strépiti*, those noises; *quèll' uómo*, that man; *quégli, uómini*, those men.

Quél, quèi, before a consonant; *quéllo, quégli*, before a vowel or an *s*, followed by another consonant.

It will sometimes be found in speaking of a man, *quèsti*, † and *quégli*, ‡ for the singular (in the nominative

Quèsti, and *quégli*, used in the singular; viz. for *questo, quello*.

* *Quèlli* instead of *quèi* is only used at the end of a sentence; as *dàtemi quèlli*, give me those; it is very seldom used before a noun or pronoun.

† *Quèsti* or *Macóne adóra, e fu Cristiáno*. Tasso; this man now adores Mahomet, and was a Christian.

‡ *Quégli abbisógna di puóco, che puòco desidera*, he wants little, who desires little, Bocc.

the latter,
the former,
&c.

tive case only), as *ha Vossignoria conosciuto il Signór Cavalière ed il Signor Conte N. N.*; have you known the Chevalier, and the Count, &c. *quésti è stato messo in prigióne, e quégli bandito*, this or the latter, has been put in prison; and that, or the former has been banished.

What has been said of *quésti* is to be understood of *cotésti*, to express *cotésto uómo*, that man.

In poetry,
quéi used
instead of
quégli.

In Poetry *quéi*, is said instead of *quégli*; as,

*Non edifica quéi, che vuól gl' impéri,
Su' fondaménti edificár mondáni*, Tasso.

He does not build empires, who would build them upon worldly foundations.

E quál è quéi, che disvuól ciò che volle, Dante.

Cotestúi,
&c. is obso-
lete.

Cotestúi. cotestéi, instead of *cotésto uómo*, *cotésta donna*; and *cotestóro*, in the plural, are obsolete.

EXERCISES.

This woman was formerly very happy. This man
donna fu altre volte felice uómo
pleases me very much. This horse goes not well.
piáce mólto cavállo non va bene
These ladies are modestly dressed. These gentlemen
signóra sono modestaménte véstito signóre
seem to be foreigners. That tree is loaded with fruit.
sémbrano forestiére álbero è cárico di frutto
How do you like that house. This is a despicable
come piáce casa spregiévole
man. That woman is prone to vice, and is inclined
è inclináto vizio proclive
to

to virtue. These girls have a very bad character, and

virtù *gióvane hanno cattívo caráttere*

those a very good one. That vexes me. I do not

buóno *dispiáce* *non*

believe that. The Prince Eugene, and the King

credo *príncipe Eugénio* *Re*

Frederic were two great generals; the latter was a

Frederico fúrono *grande generale* *fu*

great friend of Voltaire's, the former of the Emperor.

amíco *Voltaire* *Imperatóre*

It is here worth observing, that in English, before the Relative *that*, the Personal Pronoun is used instead of the Demonstrative: as he *that* is content is rich; *colúi, ch' e' conténto, è ricco*; she *that* you know; *quèlla, che voi conoscète*; blessed are they *that* die in the Lord; *Felíci quèlli, che muóiono nel Signore*: they *that* have done it, are to blame; *quèlli, che l' hanno fatto sono da biasimáre*.

In Italian the demon- strative pronoun is used where in English the Personal is applied,

EXERCISES.

He that came this morning. He that told you

è venúto *mattína* *disse*

such a thing. She that gave me your letter. He

tal *cosa* *diède* *lèttera*

whom you look for. He whom you have recom-

cercáte *avéte racco-*

mended.

mandáto.

LECTURE XV.

On the Relative and Interrogative Pronouns.

Of the relative pronouns *che*, *quale*.

The chief Relative Pronouns are but two, viz. *che*, *quale*,* and have the same meaning. The first takes the Articles *di*, *a*, *da*; the second the Articles *il*, *la*, &c. as

Their variations.

Che, who, or which; *di che*, or *di cui*, of whom, or which, *a che*, or *a cui*, to &c. *da che*, or *da cui*, from, &c.

Che and *cui* are of both genders and numbers.

Che and *cui* are of both genders, and numbers; as will presently be exemplified.

Il quále,
who, or which
del quále,
of whom, or which
al quále
to whom, &c.
dal quále,
from, &c.

I quáli,
who, or which
dei or de' quáli,
of whom, or which
ai, or a' quáli,
to whom, &c.
dai, or da' quáli,
from, &c.

* *Chi* is often a general relative pronoun, and signifies *who*, *he that*, or *whosoever*; as *chi si umilia si esalta*, who or he that humbles himself, exalts himself.

Chi tradisce l' amico, mérita la morte; who, or he that, or whoever betrays his friend deserves death.

Chi vuol vedére quantúnque può natúra,
E'l ciél tra noi, venga a mirár costéi, Petr.

He that wishes to see all that nature and heaven can produce amongst us, let him come to contemplate this woman.

la quále,
 who, or which
della quále
 of whom, or which
alla quále,
 to whom, &c.
dalla quále
 from, &c.

le quáli,
 who, or which
delle quáli
 of whom, or which
alle quáli,
 to whom, &c.
dalle quáli
 from, &c.

Remarks on these Pronouns.

Che, when it is related to a person, must be translated in English by *who*, and is only used in the nominative and objective cases; as *Piétro, che legge*, Peter who reads; *la ragázza, che voi vagheggiáte*, the girl whom you admire; *voi ed io, che parliámo assieme*, you and I, who are speaking together; *quéi giovani, che voi vedéte*, those young men whom you see.

Che is expressed by *who* when it relates to a person.

In the other cases in speaking of a person it is said, *di cui, a cui, da cui*; as *quest' è l' uómo di cui vi ho parláto*, this is the man whom I spoke to you of; *a cui feci sicurtà*, for whom I was security; *da cui ho ricevúto il dono*, from whom I have received the gift.

The oblique cases of *che* are *di cui, a cui, da cui*.

But when *che* is related to an animal, or to a thing, it must be expressed in English by *which*; and is not only of both genders and numbers; but of all cases, and admits either the indefinite, or the definite article; as *di che, a che, da che, or del che, al che, dal che*; as *l' ópera, che avéte fatta*; the work which you have done; *i libri, che avéte letti*, the books which you have

Che when it relates to a thing, is expressed by *which*.

read; *di che*, or *del che me ne dolsi*; of which I did complain.

Che when it takes the definite article can only be related to a thing,

Che with the definite article is never related to a person, but to an action, and means *la quál cosa*; as *egli volle espórsi a quel pericolo*; *il che*, viz. *la quál cosa*, *fu cásua della sua morte*, he would expose himself to that danger, which was the cause of his death.

Cui is also used in speaking of things.

Cui, as has been said, is generally made use of in speaking of persons; but is very often also employed in speaking of animals or things; as, *i bei giardini, di cui vi ho parláto*, the beautiful gardens of which I spoke to you; *il supérbo palázso, di cui avéte fatto il diségno*, the superb palace of which you have made the drawing; *il Leóné, il ruggíto di cui, spavénta i pastóri*, the lion the roaring of which frightens the shepherds.

The indefinite article is elegantly suppressed before *cui*.

The articles *di*, *a*, are very often elegantly suppressed before *cui*; the same as before *costúi*, *costei*, *colúi*, *coléi*; as *i cui mériti*, whose merits; instead of *i di cui mériti*; *cui dissi chiaraménte*, to whom I clearly told; instead of *a cui dissi*, &c,

Il quále, *la quale*, &c. relate to persons and things.

Il quále,* *i quáli*, *la quále*, *le quáli*, as has been observed, is equivalent to *che*, and relate to persons

or

* *Quale* when a Relative Pronoun cannot be used without the article: it is therefore a manifest error to say, *il libro quále mi mandáste*, instead of *il quale*, the book which you sent to me; *la lettera quále mi, scrívéste*, instead of *la quale*, the letter which you wrote to me.

Quále when used without the article means *some*; as in the following verse of Petrarca:

Equái

or things ; as *l' uómo, il quále, &c.* the man who, &c. *la donna, la quále, &c.* the woman who, &c. *il libro, il quále,* the book which : *l' animále dal quále mi salvái,* the animal from which I saved myself.

It must be observed, that, instead of *del quále, della quále, di cui, di che, dal quále, dalla quále, da cui, da che, con cui, con che, per cui ;* is very often used the general pronoun *onde ;* as *il láccio, onde è avvinto,* the snoose of which is tied ; *non so d' onde procéda,* I do not know from what it proceeds.

Onde elegantly used for del quále, della quále, di cui, &c.

Vane speránze ond' io viver soléa. Petr.

Vain hopes on which I used to live.

————— *il suóno*

Di quái sospíri, ond' io nudriva il core

In sul mio primo giovaníle erróre. Idem.

The sound of those sighs with which I fed my heart in my first youthful errors.

Che is very often equivalent to the English Pronoun *what ;* as *io solo so, che pena soffro,* I alone know what pain I suffer ; *vedéte che bella donna,* see what a fine woman ; *che è mai ?* what is it ? *non so, che sia,* I do not know what it is.

Che is equivalent to what.

Che is sometimes synonymous with *cosa ;* as *è un gran che, viz. è una gran cosa,* it is a great thing.

Che synonymous with cosa.

Che before a word beginning by *E* is commonly retrenched ; as *lo scoláre, ch' è diligénte,* the scholar who is diligent. Sometimes before an *H* it looses the two last

Che when retrenched

E quái morti da lui, quái presi vivi ;

And some killed by him, some taken alive.

(*Quai* is here instead of *quali.*)

last letters ; as *i letteráti c' hanno* (instead of *che hanno*) *intraprésa símile ópera*, the litterati who have undertaken such a work.

EXERCISES.

On the Relative Pronouns.

Alexander who found the earth too little. The
Alessandro trovò terra troppo picciolo
 man whom I have seen. He is a person to whom I
uómo ho vedúto persóna
 am much obliged. She is the woman whom I spoke
sono molto obligáto donna parlái
 of. The gentleman from whom I came. The re-
signóre venni ri-
 wards which are promised. The books which you
compénsa proméssó libro
 have printed. Which grieves me very much. Of
avéte stampáto duóle molto
 which I was so pleased. The predictions to which
mene compiacéva tanto predizióne
 you give credit. Which sometimes makes her bold.
date crédito alle volte fa ardito
 The girl who brought to me your letter. The man
ragázza portó lettera uómo
 who struck you without mercy. Fortune, from which
percósse senza pietá fortuna
 I have received many injuries. The money that has
ho ricevúto tanto ingiúria denáro è
 been sent to me yesterday. Gold is a metal that helps
stato mandáto iéri oro metállo assíste
 us

us in all our wants. I do not know what she says.

tutto bisogno non so dice

What a beautiful flower. It is not a great thing.

bello fiore non è

It will be of some use to the learner to attend to the translation of the following manners of speaking, viz. whereabout, *verso che luogo*; whereat, *alla qual cosa*, or *al che*; wherein, *nella qual cosa*, or *nel che*; whereof; *del che*; wherewith; *colla qual cosa*, or *con che*; whereunto, *alla qual cosa*, or *al che*.

Whereabout
wherein,
&c. how ex-
pressed in
Italian.

Of Interrogative Pronouns.

Are as follows: *chi?* (who?) *che?* (what?) *quale?* (which or what of them?) they admit of the articles *di*, *a*, *da*; and are of both genders.

Of the in-
terrogative
pronouns
chi? *che?*
quale?

Chi? is used only in speaking of persons for both genders and numbers; as *chi è là?* who is there? *di chi è questo ferraiuolo?* whose is this cloak? *chi sono quelle Signóre*, or *que' Signóri?* who are those ladies, or those gentlemen?

Chi is only
used in
speaking of
persons.

Chi when distributively used, means *some*; as *chi oggi*, *chi domani*, some to-day. some to-morrow; *chi va*, *chi viène*, some go, some come; *chi è avventurato*, *chi misero*, some are happy, some unhappy; *a chi la speme*, *a chi manca il timor*, some are without hope, some without fear.

Chi expres-
sed by *some*.

Chi is sometimes equivalent to *alcuno*, any who, or to *chiunque*, whosoever; as *e non v'è chi m'uccida?* and is there any who will put me to death? *vinca chi vuole*, *indifferente io sono*, conquer whoever will, I am indifferent. Metas.

Chi answers
also to *any*
who, or
whoever.

Che?

She, what,
points out
either a per-
son, or a
thing,

Che? in the following and other similar questions, serves to point out persons or things: as *che uómo è quello?* what man is that? *che giovane è quella?* what young woman is that? *che frutta sono quelle?* what fruit are those? *che affári, or quali affári avete oggi?* what business have you to-day?

Quale,
which, or
what, &c.
applied to
persons or
things.

Quále? which, or what of them, of these, of those? serves likewise for persons or things; as *quál è la casa ove abitate?* which is the house where you live? *quáli, sono i miglióri piaceri?* which are the best pleasures? *quál è vostra cugína?* which of them is your cousin?

Quale translated by
like.

Quále is sometimes neither an interrogative, nor relative pronoun, but serves to express a resemblance or likeness; as *divenúto sul viso qual è la scoloríta cénere*, having become in his countenance the colour of ashes.

Chi, che,
quále, when
curtailed.

Chi is not generally retrenched; as *chi incomin-*
cia, who begins. *Che* may be retrenched before an *e*;
as *ch' edizione è quèsta* ? what edition is this ? it may also
not be retrenched; as *che edifizio è quèllo* ? what edi-
fice is that ? *quále* is curtailed in the same instances in
which all adjectives are.

EXERCISES.

On the Interrogative Pronouns.

What man is that ? or who is that man ? What
uómo
trade are you ? What do you say ? What do you
mestiére fáte dite voléte
want ? What will you drink ? Which of these two
voléte bere due
horses

horses do you like best? From whom have you this

cavállo *vi piáce méglío* *avéte*

news? Which is the way to go to London? Some

nuóva *strada per andare Londra*

laugh, some cry. What education have you had?

ride *piánge* *educazióne avéte* *avúto*

LECTURE XVI:

On the Indefinite Pronouns.

Most of these Pronouns have the nature of an Adjective: the few which have the nature of an Adverb are the following:

Ogni Every, or each

Qualche Some

Chiúnque

Chi che sia, or } Whosoever

Chicchessía, } or

*Chisivóglia ** } Whoever

Adverbial
Pronouns.

Qualúnque } Whosoever

Qualsissia } or

Qualsivóglia } Whatsoever

Take notice, that *ogni* is never abridged in prose, though followed by a noun that begins with a vowel:

It can only be incorporated with the words *uno, una, ora;* as *ognúno, ognúna, every one; ognóra, every*

O

hour;

Remarks on
the Pronoun
ogni.

* These four Pronouns are only to be applied to persons.

hour; as it is indeclinable, cannot be used before nouns of the plural number; except before numeral numbers; as *ogni sei anni*, every six years; *ognidue mesi*, every two months. *Ogni-santi*, the day of All Saints, is the only word excepted in all the Italian language.

Qualche
cannot be
used in the
plural.

Qualche (some.)* A few writers have put this Pronoun before a plural number; but improperly; its plural is *alcúni*; as will be seen hereafter.

The Pronouns which have the nature of an Adjective, are the following :

Adjectival
Pronouns.

Tutto, tutta, tutti, tutte; all.

Altro, altra, other; *altri, altre*, others.

Un altro, un altra, another.

Stesso, stessa, stessi, stesse, or

Medésimo, medésima, medésimi, medésime, } same. †

Stessissimo, stessissima.

Stessissimi, stessissime, very same.

Certo, certa, certi, certe, certain.

Gli uni, le une, some, or the former. ‡

Tale, tali, such.

Ognúno, ognúna, or.

Cias-

* *Some* does not always, signify *qualche*; but is sometimes equivalent to the Genitive Article *del, della, delle, dei, degli*, &c. as has been observed. Page 44,

† *Medémo, medéma, medémi, medéme*, is not used by good writers: *medesmo* is used in poetry; as

Di me medésmo meco mi vergógnò, Pet.

I am inwardly ashamed of myself.

‡ It is said only in speaking of persons.

Ciascúno, ciascúna, or ciaschedúno, ciaschedúna, every one.

Nessúno, nessúna, or nissúno, nissúna, or niúno, niúna, verúno, verúna, no-body, or no one.

Other indefinite Pronouns, from the meaning they convey, may be called Pronouns of *quantity*: as

Altrettánto, altrettánta, as much more.

Altrettánti, altrettánte, as many more.

Alquánto, alquanta, a little, or somewhat.

Alquánti, alquánte, a few, or not many.

Alcúno, alcúna, alcúni, alcúne, or

Certúni, certúne, some.

Qualcúno, qualcúna, or.

Qualchedúno, qualchedúna, or.

Talúno, talúna, some body.

Tanto, tanta, or cotánto, cotánta, so much.

Tanti, tante, cotánti, cotánte, so many.

Poco, poca, pochi, poche, few.

Troppo, troppa, troppi, troppe, too much.

Adjectival
Pronouns
expressing
quantity.

Remarks on these Pronouns.

Altro without being accompanied with a substantive, signifies *one, or another thing*; as *altro è parlar di morte, altro è morire*; Maffei; it is one thing to talk of death, and another thing to die. *Semiánte facéndo di rider d' altro*, Bocc: feigning to laugh at another thing.

Altro expressed by
one, or another thing.

Altri used
in the sin-
gular.

Altri is sometimes a substantive, and is used for the nominative case of the singular; as *altri piange, altri ride*; one weeps, another laughs; or some weep, some laugh; * in its oblique cases it makes *altrúi*, which takes the articles *di, a, da*; as, *dítelo altrúi*, or *ad altrúi, non a me*, tell it to another, but not to me. †

Altrúi
means
other peo-
ple's pro-
perty.

Altrúi, with the definite article, means other people's property; as *non bisógna desideráre l' altrúi*, viz. *la-roba degli altri*; we must not covet other people's property: *egli consúma l' altrúi*, he wastes other people's property.

All when
expressed
by *tutto*.

When ex-
pressed by
ogni.

All may be translated in Italian either by *tutto*, or by *ogni*; when the word *all* is followed by an article; as *all the earth*; *all the world*, must be expressed by *tutto*; as *tutta la terra, tutto il mondo*. ‡ If after *all* there

* *Sia destín ciò, ch' io vóglío. Altri dispérso
Sen vada errándo: altri rimánga uccíso:
Atri in cure d' amor lascíve immérso
Idol si fáccia un dolce sguárdo, un riso. Tasso.*

Let my will be like fate. Let some of them go dispersed and wandering, let some be killed, let others plunged in wanton thoughts of love, place their happiness in a sweet look, or smile.

† *E' un fóglio infáme,
Che concepì, che scrisse,
Non la ragión, ma la viltáde altrúi. Metas.*

It is an infamous paper, which not reason, but the baseness of others conceived and dictated.

‡ In verse the article after *tutto* is elegantly suppressed; as *che tutte altre bellézze indiétro vanno*, instead of *tutte le altre*, &c.

there is no article, *ogni* must be used; as *all* strength, *ogni forza*; *all* beauty is transitory, *ogni bellezza è transitória*.

Nessúno, nessúna, or nissúno, nissúna; nobody, or no one, is better in common conversation, than *niúno* *Nessúno,*
niúna, or verúno, verúna; they are always negative &c. better
 either with, or without the negation *non*; as *io parlái* than *niúno*
con nessúno, or non parlái con nessúno; I spoke with &c.
 nobody.

EXERCISES.

All the men of the world. The whole earth. All

uómo mondo terra

the women. All the people. Each, or every one

donna pópolo

speaks of war. Some news. Some learned men.

parla guérria nuóva dotto

Some thing. Some butter. Some fruit. Some

cosa burro frutto

peaches. Every scholar. Tell this story to another.

pesca scoláro raccontate fola

Give me some breakfast. One eats, another drinks.

date colazione mángia beve

She speaks with no body. Whatsoever book. Who-

parla libro

soever makes a lye must be punished. It is one

fa bugía deve éssere punito

thing to make war with the pen, and another to make

fare guerra penna

it with the sword. They waste other people's property.

spada consúmano

LECTURE

LECTURE XVIII.

On the Auxilary Verbs *avére* (to have) *éssere* (to be)The Verb *Avére* exemplified.

Indicative Mood, Present Tense, which being joined to a Participle past, forms the *Perfect* of the Indicative of that Verb to whose Participle past it is joined.

<i>Io ho *</i>	<i>vedúto il picciol cavállo che,</i>	I have	seen the little horse which
<i>Tu hai</i>	<i>mandáto a mia sorélla</i>	thou hast	sent to my sister
<i>Egli ha</i>	<i>lo stesso difétto di quéllo che</i>	he has	the same defect as that, which
<i>Voi abbiamo</i>	<i>sperimentáto nella caválla che</i>	we have	experienced in the mare
<i>Voi avete</i>	<i>ultimaménte ven- dúta a' miei fra- telli, di maniera che</i>	you have	lately sold to my bro- thers, so that
<i>Eglino hanno</i>	<i>giudicáto a propó- sito di riman- dárvelo</i>	they have	thought proper to send him you again.

Imperfect,

* Some few write *io, ó tu ai egli á, eglino anno*, without *H*.

It is not necessary in Italian to prefix always the Personal Pronouns before the verbs: therefore it may be said, *io ho* or *ho, tu hai*, or *hai*, and so on. The reason whereof is on account of the different terminations of the persons of tenses throughout all the Italian verbs—some persons excepted of two tenses, as will be seen in the conjugations of verbs.

Imperfect, and when joined to a Participle past, it becomes the first *Pluperfect* of an Indicative.

Io avéva or avévo	cammináto qual- che tempo nel sentiére che	I had	been walking sometime in the path which
Tu avévi	detto, ch' era il più corto	thou hadst	said was the shortest
Egli avéva	già scritto al suo corrispondénte, che	he had	already written to his correspondent that
Noi avevámó	ricusáto di pagá- re la sua tratta	we had	refused to pay his draft
Voi aveváte	l' altro giorno un libro che	you had	a book the other day which
Eglino avé- vano	gran vóglia di compráre	they had	a great mind to buy

1. Perfect, and when joined to a Participle past, it becomes the 2nd *Pluperfect* of an Indicative.

Io ebbi	iéri un contratempo* presso a poco simile a quéllo che	I had	yesterday a disappoint- ment almost like that which
---------	--	-------	---

Tu

* *I had*, may be translated in Italian either by the *Imperfect*, *io avéva*, or by the *Perfect* *io ebbi*: as there is no such distinction in English of *Imperfect* and *Perfect* Tense, the Scholar is very apt to err, and to take one tense for the other. He ought, therefore, to take particular notice, that the *Imperfect* expresses an action which was doing, and which was not yet accomplished during the time of another past action. The *Perfect* expresses an action which is, or ought to be, entirely past. Example: If I say *io mene andáva da vostra sorélla, quando io vi vidi*; I was

<i>Tu avésti</i>	<i>la settimana pas- sata</i>	thou hadst	last week
<i>Egli ebbe</i>	<i>la disgrázia di ca- dère in terra dopo</i>	he had	the misfortune to tum- ble down after
<i>Noi avémmo</i>	<i>cammináto un ora incirca</i>	we had	walked about an hour
<i>Voi avéste</i>	<i>migliór opinión di loro, dacche</i>	you had	a better opinion of them after
<i>Eglino ebbero</i>	<i>détto chi érano</i>	they had	said who they were

Second Perfect.

<i>Io ho avúto, &c.</i>	<i>il piacére d' in- tèndere che pro- fitta</i>	I have had	the pleasure to hear that he improves
---------------------------------	---	------------	--

First Pluperfect.

<i>Io avéva avú- to, &c.</i>	<i>il tempo d' esami- nare ogni cosa prima ch' egli arrivásse</i>	I had had	time to examine every thing before he came
--------------------------------------	---	-----------	---

Second Pluperfect.

<i>Io ebbi avú- to, &c.</i>	<i>tosto che, or appéna la sua rispósta, io mi ritirái, &c.</i>	I had had	as soon as his answer, I withdrew, &c.
-------------------------------------	---	-----------	--

Io

was going to your sister when I saw you; *andáva*, in this instance, it is *imperfect*, because it is not known whether I really went to your sister or no; but if I say, *andái ieri da vostra sorélla*, in that case it is *Perfect*, because it is fully understood, that I went there. The *Imperfect* likewise expresses an habitual action, or one often repeated in time past, &c. *Io andáva quasi ogni sera a visitare la célebre Corilla*; I went almost every night to pay a visit to the famous *Corilla*, (that is to say, I used to go.)

Future, and when joined to a Participle past, it becomes the Future of a Conjunctive Mood.

<i>Io avrò</i>	<i>minór difficoltà</i>	I shall have	less trouble to hold myself on horseback, after
	<i>di stare a cavallo, dacché</i>		
<i>Tu avrai</i>	<i>allungáte le staffe</i>	thou shalt have	lengthened my stirrups
<i>Egli avrà</i>	<i>un ora per riposarsi, e</i>	he shall have	an hour to rest himself, and
<i>Noi avremo</i>	<i>il tempo di raggiungerlo, se parte ora</i>	we shall have	time to overtake him, if he sets off now
<i>Voi avrete</i>	<i>il piacere di lavorare, mentre</i>	you shall have	the pleasure to work, whilst
<i>Eglio avranno</i>	<i>il dispiacere di non far nulla</i>	they shall have	the trouble to stand still

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>Abbi</i>	<i>paziénza sino a lunedì próssimo</i>	have	patience till next Monday
<i>Abbia</i>	<i>panni - lini di bucato tre volte la settimana</i>	let him have	clean linen three times a week
<i>Abbiámo</i>	<i>sentimenti un pó più caritatévoli</i>	let us have	sentiments a little more charitable
<i>Abbiáte</i>	<i>pietà di questo povero fanciullo</i>	have	compassion on that poor boy
<i>Abbiano</i>	<i>del lavoro in gran copia</i>	let them have	plenty of work

CONJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, which, when joined to a Participle past, becomes Perfect of a Conjunctive.

<i>Io ábbia</i>	<i>Quantúnque or sebbène sollecitato per lui, e che</i>	I have	Tho' solicited for him, and
<i>Tu abbi or abbia</i>	<i>scritto in favór suo, nongli è riuscito</i>	thou hast	written in his favour, he has not succeeded
<i>Egli ábbia</i>	<i>vinto la sua lite, e</i>	he has	gained his suit at law, and
<i>Noi abbiámo</i>	<i>perdúta la nostra. non è piu avan- zato di noi</i>	we have	lost ours, he is no better off than we are
<i>Voi abbiáte</i>	<i>dell' autorità tra gli uómini, e che</i>	you have	some authority a- mongst
<i>Eglino ábbi- ano</i>	<i>del rispétto pel</i>	they have	men, and some respect for your
<i>Abbino is vulgar.</i>	<i>vostro caráttere, essi, sprézzano le vostre azióni</i>		character, they despise your actions.

First Imperfect, which being joined to a Participle past, becomes the First Pluperfect of a Conjunctive Mood.

<i>Io avréi</i>	<i>più o meno stima per te, secóndo che</i>	I should have	more or less esteem for thee in proportion as
<i>Tu avrésti</i>	<i>più o meno passióne pel giuóco</i>	thou shouldst have	more or less passion for gaming
<i>Egli avrébbe</i>	<i>allóra ragióne di lagnársi, perchè</i>	he would have	then reason to com- plain, that

Noi avrémmo	impedito l' esecuzione	we should have hindered the execution of his orders
Avriamo poetical.	de' suoi ordini	
Voi avréste	conchiúso	you would have concluded this marriage
	questo matrimonio,	though
	quantunque	
Eglio avrébbero,	intrapreso di	they should have undertaken to oppose
or	oppórvisi	it
avrèbbono		
Avriano is poetical.		

Second Imperfect, which being joined to a Participle past, becomes the 2nd Pluperfect of a Conjunctive Mood.

Se			
Io avéssi	autorità sù di te,	I had	authority over thee
	e che		and that
Tu avéssi	vóglia di continuare a far	thou hadst	a mind to continue
	del male, io ti		to do ill, I would chastise thee
	puniréi		
Egli avésse	intensione di lasciare i suoi cattivi costumi, e	he had	a mind to leave off his bad habit, and
Noi avéssimo	una sicura garanzia della sua futura condotta, noi l' aiuterémmo	we had	a sure voucher for his future conduct, we would help him
Voi avéste	della gratitudine inverso i vostri amici, e che	you had	some thankfulness towards your friends, and that

<i>Eglino avés- sero</i>	<i>avúto ragióne di approvare la vostra con- dotta, vi avréb- bero protétto</i>	they had	reason to approve your conduct, they would have protected you.
------------------------------	---	----------	--

Perfect.

<i>Quantúnque</i>		Though	
<i>Io ábbia a- vúto</i>	<i>poco fa una ma- lattia pericolosa, non mene sto peggio per qués- to, or non mene risento</i>	I have had	a little while ago a dangerous illness, I am not the worse for it.

FIRST PLUPERFECT.

<i>Allóra</i>		Then	
<i>Io avéi avù- to</i>	<i>la conso- lazióne di vederlo fuóri di schiavitù</i>	I should have had	the comfort to see him out of slavery

SECOND PLUPERFECT.

	<i>Il ciél volésse,</i>	Would to God	
	<i>che</i>		
<i>Io avéssi avúto</i>	<i>la fortuna di vederlo pri- ma che, mo- risse</i>	I had had	the happiness to see him before he died,

FUTURE.

<i>Quándo</i>		When	
<i>Io avrò avú- to.</i>	<i>qéesta rispósta, non avrò più nulla a te- mére</i>	I have had	this answer I shall have nothing more to be afraid of.

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood Present, *avére* * to have. Perfect, *avere avúto*, to have had. Participle Present (or Gerund) *avéndo*, having; *coll' avére*, or *con avére*; *in avére*, or *nell' avére*, in having, or by having. Participle Past, *avéndo avúto*, *avúta*, *avúti*, *avúte*, having had.

The following Words being joined to the Verb *Avére* in Italian, are turned into English by the Verb *éssere*, throughout all its Moods, Tenses, and Persons. †

<i>Ho</i>	<i>fame</i>	<i>ragióne</i>
I am	hungry	in the right.
<i>Hai</i>	<i>sete</i>	<i>torto</i>
thou art	dry	in the wrong
<i>Ha</i>	<i>freddo</i>	<i>male</i>
He is	cold	not well
<i>Abbiámo</i>	<i>caldo</i>	<i>della prudénza</i>
We are	hot	prudent
<i>Avéte</i>	<i>vergógna</i>	<i>della ritenutézza</i>
You are	ashamed	reserved
<i>Hanno</i>		<i>paúra della gratitúdine</i>
They are	afraid	grateful

Words
which take
in Italian the
verb *avére*,
and in Eng-
lish *éssere*.

Non

* This verb before an Infinitive with the particle *da* or *a*, is equivalent to the verb *dovére*, (to owe:) as *io ho da fare*; I ought to do; *avrébbe a parláre il primo*; he ought to speak the first, &c.

† When we speak of *cold*, *heat*, *hunger*, *thirst*, or of the age of any body, we make use of the verb *avére*.

Non so che età avéva vostro zio.

I do not know how old your uncle was.

Mio fratéllo avrà ventícinqu' anni dománi.

My brother will be five and twenty years old to-morrow

Le mie sorélle non ne avránno che ventidúe

My sisters will be but twenty-two *

Che età ha vostra madre?

How old is your mother?

Abbiáte la bontà d' accordármi quèsto favóre.

Be so kind as to grant me this favour.

Se vostro padre volésse avér la bontà d' imprestármi un cavállo.

If your father would be so good as to lend me one of your horses.

he verb
ére ele-
ntly used
r the verb
sere.

In Italian we also substitute very often the verb *avére* for the verb *éssere* (in the third person only) in the following and other similar instances.

Quánte miglia ci ha? (instead of) *ci sono.*

How many miles there are?

Ebbevi di quèlli, che vóllero (instead of) *vi fúrono*

There have been some who would, &c.

Come che oggi v' ábbia ricchi uómini (instead of *vi síano*)

As there are to-day many rich men, &c.

Ve

* But, in this, and other similar cases, is turned in Italian by *che*, or *se non*, with a negative before the verb; as, I will stay there but two or three days, *non vi resterà che due o tre giòrni*; or *se non due o tre giòrni*; which is better.

Ve n' ebbe già uno (instead of *ve ne fu* †
There was already one, &c.

The Verb *essere* (to be) exemplified.

Indicative Mood, Present Tense, and when joined to a Participle past, forms the Perfect of an Indicative.

<i>Io sono</i>	<i>conténto d' intendere, che</i>	I am	glad to hear that
<i>Tu sei</i>	<i>divenuto sì diligente quanto tuo fratello</i>	thou art	become as diligent as thy brother
<i>Egli è</i>	<i>talmente dato alla lettura, che</i>	he is	so much addicted to reading that
<i>Noi siamo</i>	<i>qualche volta obligati di porre sotto chiave i suoi libri</i>	we are	sometimes obliged to lock up his books
<i>Voi siete</i>	<i>molto sovente in casa a lavorare, mentre</i>	you are	very often at home working, whilst
<i>Egli sono</i>	<i>fuori a divertirsi</i>	they are	abroad diverting themselves.

Imperfect, which when joined to a Participle past becomes First Pluperfect of an Indicative.

<i>Io era, or ero</i>	<i>sempre malinconico tutte le volte, che</i>	I was	always sorrowful every time that
-----------------------	---	-------	----------------------------------

† By these last instances, it is observable, that not only the verb *avere* may be used with great propriety for the verb *essere*, but that the verb *avere* is sometimes elegantly used in the singular; although the noun to which it is joined, is in the plural.

<i>Tu eri</i>	<i>indispósto.</i>	thou wast	indisposed.
<i>Eglí era</i>	<i>in campágnà a divertírsi, mentre</i>	he was	in the country diverting himself, whilst
<i>Ioí eravámo eramo, poetical</i>	<i>in città ad aggiustáre i suói conti.</i>	we were	in town settling his accounts.
<i>Voi eraváte eráte poetical</i>	<i>sotto il padiglióne a bere il tè, mentre</i>	you were	in the summer-house drinking tea, whilst
<i>Eglino éranó</i>	<i>nel fúme a bagnársi</i>	they were	in the river, bathing themselves

Definite, which being joined to a Participle past, forms the Second Pluperfect of an Indicative.

<i>Io fui</i>	<i>più mesto dopo che</i>	I was	more sad after
<i>Tu fosti, fusti is vulgar.</i>	<i>partíto, che nel moménto della tua parténza</i>	thou wast	gone, than at the moment of thy departure
<i>Egli fue, poet.</i>	<i>colto dallo spavénto, allórché</i>	he was	seized with fear when
<i>Noi fummo</i>	<i>entráti nella nave</i>	we were	got into the ship
<i>Voi foste, fuste, vulgar.</i>	<i>fatti prigionieri di guérre lo stesso giòrno, che</i>	you were	made prisoners of war the same day that
<i>Eglino fúrono</i>	<i>messi in libertà</i>	they were	set at liberty

Perfect.

<i>Io sono stato</i> &c.	* <i>in città due</i> <i>settimáne</i>	I have been &c.	in town two weeks
-----------------------------	---	--------------------	-------------------

First Pluperfect.

<i>Io era stato</i> &c.	<i>a comprár del-</i> <i>la carta, pri-</i> <i>ma ch' arri-</i> <i>vásse</i>	I had been &c.	to buy some paper before he arrived
----------------------------	---	-------------------	--

Second Pluperfect.

<i>Io fui stato</i> &c.	<i>Appéna</i> <i>a préndere con-</i> <i>géo da lui,</i> <i>sene parti</i>	as soon as I had been	to take my leave of him, he set off
----------------------------	--	--------------------------	--

Future, which being joined to a Participle past, becomes the Future of a Conjunctive Mood.

<i>Io sarò</i>	<i>assái più tran-</i> <i>quillo, allorchè</i>	I shall be	much more easy after
<i>Tu sarái</i>	<i>in luógo di sicu-</i> <i>rézza</i>	thou shalt be	in a place of safety
<i>Egli sarà</i>	<i>in città lunedì al</i> <i>più presto, e</i>	he will be	in town Monday at soonest, and
<i>Noi saremo</i>	<i>in càmpaña sá-</i> <i>bato, o doménica</i> <i>al più tardí</i>	we shall be	in the country Satur- day or Sunday at farthest,
<i>Voi saréte</i>	<i>più a vostr' ágio</i> <i>allorchè</i>	you will be	more at your ease after
<i>Eglino saran-</i> <i>no</i>	<i>fuóri di carózza</i>	they shall be	gone out of the coach

Q

Impera-

* The Participle *stato* is not conjugated by the help of the verb *Avere*; but by itself, and never it can be said *ho stato*, as in English and French; but *io sono stato*, (I am been) *sei stato*, (thou art been) and so on.

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sii or sia</i>	<i>dolce, giústo, e moderáto nelle tue correzioni</i>	be	mild, just, and moderate in thy reprimands
<i>Sia</i>	<i>ragionevole ne' suoi comandi, se vuol essere ubbidito</i>	let him be	reasonable in his orders, if he would be obeyed
<i>Siámo</i>	<i>per l' innánzi cáuti, ed atténti</i>	let us be	hereafter upon our guards
<i>Siáte</i>	<i>piú moderáto ne' vostri desidér;</i>	be	more moderate in your desires
<i>Siéno or</i>	<i>pronti ad eseguiré, e tardí a delibe:</i>	let them be	ready in executing, and slow in deliberating
<i>Síano</i>	<i>ráre</i>		

Conjunctive Mood, Present Tense, and when joined to a Participle past, becomes a Perfect of a Conjunctive.

<i>Io sia</i>	<i>Purchè di ritórno, fra due mesi, e che</i>	Provided I am	back in two months and that
<i>Tu sii, or Sia</i>	<i>conténto, ch' io fáccia quèsto viággio, io l' intraprenderò</i>	thou art	satisfied I should go on that journey, I will undertake it
<i>Egli sia</i>	<i>nella stessa intenzione da quì a qualche tempo, e che</i>	he is	in the same mind some time hence, and
<i>Noi siámo</i>	<i>allóra in città, la cosa potrà farsi</i>	we are	then in town, the thing may be done
<i>Voi siáte</i>	<i>onèsto, e diligènte, e che</i>	you are	honest and diligent and

<i>Eglino siano</i>	<i>conténti della vostra condotta, essi v'incoraggeranno</i>	they are	satisfied with your conduct, they will encourage you, &c.
---------------------	--	----------	---

First Imperfect, which being joined to a Participle past, forms the First Pluperfect of a Conjunctive.

<i>Io saréi</i>	<i>d'opinione contraria alla tua, quánd'anche</i>	I should be	of a contrary opinion to thine, tho'
<i>Tu sarésti</i>	<i>il più famoso médico del mondo</i>	thou shouldst be	the most famous physician of the faculty
<i>Egli sarébbe</i>	<i>conténto di vivere fra noi,</i> <i>e</i>	he would be	satisfied to live amongst us, and
<i>Noi sarémmo sarebbamo</i> is vulgar	<i>fortunáti di possederlo</i>	we should be	happy in the possession of him.
<i>Voi saréste</i>	<i>il primo della vostra classe</i>	you would be	the first of your class, and
<i>Eglino sarebbero</i>	<i>gli ultimi della loro</i>	they would be	the last of theirs.

Second Imperfect, which being joined to a Participle past, forms the First Pluperfect of a Conjunctive.

<i>Posto che</i> <i>Io fossi, fussi</i> is obsolete.	<i>meno apérto,</i> <i>e che</i>	Provided	I was	less open, or that
--	-------------------------------------	----------	-------	--------------------

<i>Tu fossi</i>	<i>così sincero,</i> <i>come pre-</i> <i>tendi d'és-</i> <i>serlo, tutto</i> <i>andrebbe be-</i> <i>ne</i>	thou wast	as sincere as thou pre- tendest to be, all would go right.
<i>Egli fosse</i>	<i>arrivato sano</i> <i>e salvo, e</i> <i>che</i>	he was	arrived safe and sound and that
<i>Noi fossimo</i>	<i>informati dello</i> <i>stato di sua sa-</i> <i>lute, l' animo</i> <i>mio sarebbe</i> <i>tranquillo</i>	we were	informed of the state of his health, my mind would be at ease.
<i>Voi foste</i>	<i>escito un mo-</i> <i>mento più</i> <i>tardi, o che</i>	you were or had	gone out a moment later, or that
<i>Eglio fós- sero</i>	<i>arrivati un'</i> <i>istante più</i> <i>presto, qués-</i> <i>ta disgrazia</i> <i>non sarebbe</i> <i>seguita</i>	they were or had	arrived an instant sooner, that misfor- tune would have been prevented.

Perfect.

<i>Io sia stato</i>	<i>Quantunque</i> <i>là, non miri-</i> <i>cordo più</i> <i>del luogo</i>	Though I have been	there, I do not recol- lect the place.
---------------------	---	-----------------------	---

FIRST PLUPERFECT.

<i>Io sarei sta-</i> <i>to &c.</i>	<i>in città</i> <i>due ore</i> <i>prima</i>	I should have been	in town two hours sooner.
---	---	--------------------	------------------------------

SECOND PLUPERFECT.

<i>Purchè, or</i> <i>postochè,</i> <i>Io fossi sta-</i> <i>to &c.</i>	<i>innocente, egli</i> <i>m' avrebbe</i> <i>perdonato</i>	Provided I had been	innocent, he would have forgiven me.
--	---	------------------------	---

FUTURE

FUTURE.

<i>Quando</i>	<i>in campagna due</i>	<i>When</i>
<i>Io sarò stato</i>	<i>o'tregi-</i>	<i>I shall have been</i>
<i>&c.</i>	<i>órni, ne</i>	<i>in the country two or</i>
	<i>sarò stanco</i>	<i>three days I shall</i>
		<i>be tired of it.</i>

Infinite Mood, Present, *essere* (to be) Perfect *essere stato* (to have been) Participle Present, or Gerund, *essendo* (being) *coll'*, or *con*, *in*, or *nell' essere* (in, or by being) Participle past, *essendo stato, stata, stati, state* (in having been.)

This verb being joined to a Participle past in all its Moods, Tenses, and Persons, forms a Passive Verb.

Note. When the Verb *to be* is followed in English by a Gerund, it ought not to be expressed in Italian; and the Gerund must be put in Italian in the same Tense, Number, and Person, as the Verb *to be* is.

The verb *to be* suppressed in Italian

EXAMPLES

A diligent scholar is always learning.

Uno scoláre diligénte stúdia di continuo.

Apelles was daily drawing, &c.

Apélle disegnáva ogni giòrno, &c.

They will be perpetually lamenting their folly;

Si lamenteránno perpetuaménte della loro pazzia.

EXERCISES.

On this last Rule.

Whilst the master is instructing, the scholars are

Mentre mǎestro istruire scoláre playing,

playing. They will be every moment condemning them-
giuocare ad ogni moménto condannare
 selves,
 and saying, &c.
e dire.

LECTURE XVIII.

General Remarks on Verbs.

verb may
 conjugat-
 fourways.

A verb is conjugated four ways, viz.

1. Affirming; as *io ho* (I have)
2. Denying; as *io non ho* (I have not.)
3. Asking; as *ho io?* (have I?)
4. Asking with a negative; as *non ho io?* (have I not?)

In affirming the Pronoun, or nominative is put before the Verb; as *ella dice*, (she says.) *Pietro parla*, (Peter speaks.) *égliino s' ingánnano* (they mistake.) *Tutti gli uómini sono inclinàti a far male*, (all men are inclined to do evil.)

In denying. the negative particle is put before the verb; as *io non temo nessuno*, (I fear no-body.) *Io non bevo, ne' mángio*, (I neither eat, nor drink.) *Voi non avéte peránche cominciáto*, (you have not began yet.) *Io non ho nulla, or niénte a fare*, * (I have nothing to do.) *Voi non né avéte*, (you have none.)

In

* Two negatives in Italian are not equivalent to an affirmative, as in English; provided the first negative be placed before the verb, and the second after it; as, *voi non avete nulla di meglio ad offerir loro*; you had nothing better to offer to them. *Non v' ha niúno quaggiù pienaménte felice*;

In asking the Personal Pronoun is placed after the verb; as *do io!* (do I give) *hai tu mal fatto di chiamárlo?* (hast thou done wrong to call him?) When there is a substantive in the sentence it is likewise generally put after the verb; as *é egli arriváto il vascéllo?* (is the ship arrived?) *Parla egli bene mio padre?* (does my father speak well?)

In asking with a negative we put the negative before the verb; as *non é egli in città?* (is he not in town?) *Non avrémo noi il piacere di vedervi quésa sera?* (shall we not have the pleasure to see you this evening?) *I vostri amici non sono églino peránco arriváti?* (are not your friends arrived yet?)

EXERCISES.

On the above Rules.

I am not ready yet. You are able to do this.
pronto ancóra *capáce di fare*
 They are all gone. He has not answered a single
andáto *rispósto* *solo*
 word. I had nothing good to give him. Thou hadst
paróla *buóno dare*
 nothing to tell him in particular. Has he won the
dire *particoláre* *guadagnáto*
 game?

lice; no-body is in this world perfectly happy. To say *niúno non è pienaménte felice*, would be the same as to say *tutti sono felíci*, all are happy, &c.

The two Particles *non nè* are both placed before the verb, as; *non nè avránno mai*, they never shall have none.

game? Should they have undertaken the work?

partita

intrapreso

ópera

Have they not refused to do it? Shall he not have

ricusáto di fare?

time enough to write to him? They have nothing

tempo abbastánza scrivere

better to offer to them? Shall we have none?

offrire

avére.

Other interesting Observations on Verbs.

The Italian
Infinites
have three
terminati-
ons.

The Infinitives of the English Verbs are known by the particle *to* which is generally before them. The Infinites in Italian are known by their termination, viz. in *Are*, *Ere*, *Ire*; as *amére* (to love) *vedére* (to see) *capíre* (to understand.)

The Ge-
runds have
vo.

The English Gerunds end in *ing*, as *having*, *being*, *loving*: the Italian end in *Ando*; as *amándo*, for the first conjugation; in *endo*, for the second, and third; as *credéndo* (believing) *udéndo* (hearing)

The Parti-
ples of re-
gular verbs
have three.

Although the English Participles are very irregular, they generally terminate in *ed*; as *loved*; In Italian they have three terminations, viz. in *Ato*; as *amáto* (loved) for the first conjugation. In *Uto*; as *credúto* (believed) for the second. In *Ito*, as *servíto* (served) for the third.

Some Participles of the irregular Verbs have different terminations, as will be observed in their respective place.

When the
Infinites in
Italian have
the nature
of a substan-
tive.

The Infinite in Italian, when preceded by the Definite Article, has the nature of a substantive; as *é proibíto il far male* (it is forbidden to do evil.) *Non è civile*

è civile l' interrómperre gli altri quando párlano (it is not polite to interrupt others when they speak.) *Non è sempre conveniénte il corréggere i fanciulli* (it is not always proper to correct children.) *Il giuocáre è qualche volta necessário* (to play is sometimes necessary.)

In some of these instances the 'English Infinitive Mood does the office of the substantive, as well as in Italian, and the only difference is, that in English the Article is not wanted, and the Particle *to* supplies the place of the Article.

The Italian Infinitives are sometimes expressed by the English Gerunds; as *l' éssere* (the being). *Il mangiáre* (the eating). *Lo studiáre* (the studying). *In or nell' avére* (in having). *Col bere* (by drinking). *Collo studiáre* (by studying). *Senza mangiáre* (without eating). *Per rídere* (for laughing).

The Infinitive being preceded by the Article or some preposition, is translated in English by the Gerund.

The Indefinite Articles, or Prepositions *di, a, da*, are very often placed before the Infinites, and answer to the English particle *to*. Ex. *è tempo per V. S. di cominciáre a parlár Italiáno* (it is time for you, Sir, or Madam to begin to speak Italian). *Quésto è buóno da mangiáre* (this is good to eat). *La Signóra è andáta a passeggiáre* (the lady is gone to take a walk.)

When the Particles *di, a, da* are equivalent to the English Particle *to*.

When the English simple Preterites come alone in a sentence; as *I had it from him; I was there; I spoke to her;* &c. they are expressed in Italian in two ways, viz. by

R

the

I had it from him, I spoke to her, &c. may be translated in Italian in two ways.

the first, or by the second Perfect. If the past action expressed by the English Preterite is fixed in regard to time; as *I had it from him yesterday*, then the First Perfect must be used; as *l' ebbi da lui ieri*. *I was there last week*; *io fui là la settimana pàssata*. *I spoke to her last night*; *le parlai ieri sera*. But if the action past is not determined with regard to time, or if it was done the same day it is spoken of; the second Perfect must be used; as *io l' ho avúto*; *io sono stato là*; *io le ho parláto*.

*A Model of a Verb of the First Conjugation,
viz. in Are.*

PRESENT.

<i>Io parlo</i>	I speak
<i>Tu parli</i>	thou speakest
<i>Egli, or ella parla</i>	he or she speaks
<i>Noi parliámo</i>	we speak
<i>Voi parláte</i>	you speak
<i>Eglino or élleno párlano</i>	they speak

IMPERFECT.

<i>Parláva, or parlávo</i>	I did speak
<i>Parlávi</i>	thou didst speak
<i>Parláva</i>	he did speak
<i>Parlavámo</i>	we did speak
<i>Parlaváte</i>	you did speak
<i>Parlávano</i>	they did speak

PERFECT.

<i>Parlái</i>	I spoke
<i>Parlásti</i>	thou spokedst

<i>Parlò</i>	he spoke
<i>Parlámmo</i>	we spoke
<i>Parláste</i>	you spoke
<i>Parlárono</i>	they spoke

FUTURE.

<i>Parlerò</i>	I shall speak
<i>Parlerái</i>	thou shalt speak
<i>Parlerà</i>	he shall speak
<i>Parlerémo</i>	we shall speak
<i>Parleréte</i>	you shall speak
<i>Parleránno</i>	they shall speak

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Parla</i>	speak thou
<i>Parli</i>	let him speak
<i>Parliámo</i>	let us speak
<i>Parláte</i>	speak you
<i>Párlino</i>	let them speak

CONJUNCTIVE.

<i>Che io parli</i>	that I may speak
<i>Che tu parli</i>	that thou mayest speak
<i>Ch' egli parli</i>	that he may speak
<i>Che noi parliámo</i>	that we may speak
<i>Che voi parliáte</i>	that you may speak
<i>Ch' èglino párlino</i>	that they may speak

FIRST IMPERFECT.

<i>Parleréi</i>	I should speak
<i>Parlerésti</i>	thou shouldst speak
<i>Parlerébbe</i>	he should speak
<i>Parlerémmo</i>	we should speak

<i>Parleréste</i>	you should speak
<i>Parlerébbero</i> or	they should speak
<i>Parlerébbono</i>	

SECOND IMPERFECT.

<i>Parlássi</i>	I might speak
<i>Parlássi</i>	thou mightest speak
<i>Parlássse</i>	he might speak
<i>Parlássimo</i>	we might speak
<i>Parláste</i>	you might speak
<i>Parlássero</i>	they might speak

INFINITIVE.

<i>Parlâre</i>	to speak
----------------	----------

Gerund, or Participle Present.

<i>Parlândo</i>	speaking
<i>Con, or col</i>	in, or by speaking
<i>In, or nel</i> <i>parlâre</i>	

PARTICIPLE PAST.

<i>Parlâto</i>	spoken
----------------	--------

The compound Tenses of this Verb are formed by the help of the auxiliary verb *avére*; as *io ho parlâto*, I have spoken. *Io avéva parlâto*, I had spoken. *Avrò parlâto*, I shall have spoken. *Se avéssi parlâto*, If I had spoken, &c.

It must be observed, that all verbs which end in *Care*, and *Gare*, as *peccâre*, *pagâre*, take an *H* in those tenses in which *C* or *G* precedes *E* or *I*: therefore, in the Present of the Indicative they make *tu peccâhi*, thou sinest; *tu pagâhi*, thou payest. In the Future, *io peccherò*, &c. I shall sin; *io pagherò*, &c. I shall pay. In the First Imperfect, *io peccheréi*, &c. I should sin; *io pagheréi*, &c. I should pay.

A Model

*A Model of a Verb of the Second Conjugation,
viz. in Ere.*

PRESENT

<i>Io credo</i>	I believe
<i>Tu credi</i>	thou believest
<i>Egli crede</i>	he believes
<i>Noi crediámo</i>	we believe
<i>Voi credéte</i>	you believe
<i>Eglino crédono</i>	they believe

IMPERFECT.

<i>Credéva, or credévo</i>	I did believe
<i>Credévi</i>	thou didst believe
<i>Credéva</i>	he did believe
<i>Credévámo</i>	we did believe
<i>Credéváte</i>	you did believe
<i>Credévano</i>	they did believe

PERFECT.

<i>Credéi or credétti</i>	I believed
<i>Credésti</i>	thou believest
<i>Credè, or credétte</i>	he believed
<i>Credémmo</i>	we believed
<i>Credéste</i>	you believed
<i>Credérono, or credéttero</i>	they believed

FUTURE.

<i>Crederò</i>	I shall, or will believe
<i>Crederái</i>	thou shalt believe
<i>Crederà</i>	he shall believe
<i>Crederémo</i>	we shall believe
<i>Crederéte</i>	you shall believe
<i>Crederánno</i>	they shall believe

IMPERATIVE.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Credi</i>	Believe thou
<i>Creda</i>	let him believe
<i>Crediámo</i>	let us believe
<i>Credéte</i>	believe you
<i>Crédano</i>	let them believe

CONJUNCTIVE.

<i>Che io creda</i>	That I believe or may believe
<i>tu creda</i>	thou believest
<i>egli creda</i>	he believeth
<i>noi crediámo</i>	we believe
<i>voi crediáte</i>	you believe
<i>églino crédano</i>	they believe

FIRST IMPERFECT.

<i>Crederei</i>	I should, would, or could believe
<i>Crederesti</i>	thou shouldest believe
<i>Crederebbe</i>	he should believe
<i>Crederemmo</i>	we should believe
<i>Credereste</i>	you should believe
<i>Crederebbero</i>	they should believe

SECOND IMPERFECT.

<i>Credessi</i>	I might, or could believe
<i>Credessi</i>	thou mightest believe
<i>Credesse</i>	he might believe
<i>Credessimo</i>	we might believe
<i>Credeste</i>	you might believe
<i>Credessero</i>	they might believe

INFINITIVE.

<i>Crédere</i>	to believe
----------------	------------

GERUND,

<i>Credéndo</i>	believing
<i>Col or con in or nel</i>	<i>crédere</i> in or by believing

PARTICIPLE.

<i>Credúto, credúta</i>	believed
<i>Credúte, credúti</i>	

The compound tenses are formed by the help of the verb *avére*, as *ho credúto*, I have believed; *avéva credúto*, I had believed; *ebbi credúto*, I had believed; *che io ábbia credúto*, that I have believed; *se avéssi credúto*, if I had believed; *avrèi credúto*, I had, or should, would, or could believe; *avrò credúto*, I shall have believed, &c.

*A Model of a Verb of the Third Conjugation,
viz. in Ire.*

<i>Io favorísco †</i>	I favour
<i>Tu favorísci</i>	thou favourest
<i>Egli favorísce</i>	he favours
<i>Noi favoriámo</i>	we favour
<i>Voi favoríte</i>	you favour
<i>Eglino favoríscono</i>	they favour

IMPERFECT.

† A Verb in *isco* it is given for the third regular Conjugation instead of the Verb *dormíre*, to sleep, *servíre*, to serve, or some other like; as amongst the verbs ending in *Ire* for one that is conjugated like *dormíre*, there are fifty like *favoríre*, as will be seen by the list of the verbs in *Ire* placed in

IMPERFECT.

<i>Favoriva</i> or <i>favorivo</i>	I did favour
<i>Favorivi</i>	thou didst favour
<i>Favoriva</i>	he did favour
<i>Favorivámo</i>	we did favour
<i>Favoriváte</i>	you did favour
<i>Favorivano</i>	they did favour

PERFECT.

<i>Favorii</i>	I favoured
<i>Favoristi</i>	thou favouredst
<i>Favorì</i>	he favoured
<i>Favorimmo</i>	we favoured
<i>Favoriste</i>	you favoured
<i>Favorirono</i>	they favoured

FUTURE.

~~<i>Favorirò</i>~~	I shall favour
<i>Favorirai</i>	thou shalt favour
<i>Favorirà</i>	he shall favour
<i>Favorirémo</i>	we shall favour
<i>Favoriréte</i>	you shall favour
<i>Favoriránno</i>	they shall favour

in the last of these Lectures. The Verb *dormire* is conjugated as follows: Present, *dormo, dormi, dorme, dormiamo, dormite, dormono*. Imperative, *dormi, dorma, dormiamo, dormite, dormano*. Subjunctive, *ch' io dorma, che tu dorma, ch' egli dorma, che noi dormiamo, che voi dormiate, ch' églino dormano*. The other tenses like *favorire*.

IMPERATIVE.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Favorisci</i>	Favour thou
<i>Favorisca</i>	let him favour
<i>Favoriámo</i>	let us favour
<i>Favorite</i>	favour you
<i>Favoriscano</i>	let them favour

CONJUNCTIVE.

<i>Ch' io favorisca</i>	That I favour
<i>Che tu favorisca</i>	that thou favour
<i>Ch' egli favorisca</i>	that he favour
<i>Che noi favoriámo</i>	that we favour
<i>Che voi favoriáte</i>	that you favour
<i>Ch' églino favoriscano</i>	that they favour

FIRST IMPERFECT.

<i>Favoriréi</i>	I should favour
<i>Favorirésti</i>	thou shouldst favour
<i>Favorirébbe</i>	he should favour
<i>Favorirémme</i>	we should favour
<i>Favoriréste</i>	you should favour
<i>Favorirébbono</i>	they should favour

SECOND IMPERFECT.

<i>Favoríssi</i>	If I should favour
<i>Favoríssi</i>	if thou shouldst favour
<i>Favorísse</i>	if he should favour
<i>Favoríssimo</i>	if we should favour
<i>Favoríste</i>	if you should favour
<i>Favoríssero</i>	if they should favour

INFINITIVE.

<i>Favorire</i>	to favour
-----------------	-----------

GERUND.

<i>Favoréndo</i>	favouring
<i>In, or nel</i>	in, or by favouring
<i>Con, or col</i> <i>favore</i>	

PARTICIPLE PAST.

<i>Favorito</i>	<i>Favorita</i>	favoured
<i>Favoriti</i>	<i>Favorite</i>	

LECTURE XIX:

A model of a Passive verb.

The passive verbs are nothing more than the Participles of Active verbs conjugated with the verb *éssere*.*

PRESENT.

<i>Io sono amato, or amata</i>	I am loved
<i>Tu sei amato or amata</i>	thou art loved
<i>Egli è amato, or ella è amata</i>	he or she is loved
<i>Noi siamo amati, or amate</i>	we are loved
<i>Voi siete amati, or amate</i>	you are loved
<i>Eglino sono amati, or élleno sono amate</i>	they are loved

IMPERFECT.

<i>Era amato, or amata</i>	I was loved
<i>Eri amato, or &c.</i>	thou wast, &c.
<i>Era amato, or &c.</i>	he was, &c.

* All active verbs, very few excepted, may become passive by the junction of the verb *éssere* with its Participle.

<i>Eravamo amâti, or amâte</i>	we were loved
<i>Eravate amâti, or &c.</i>	you, &c.
<i>Erano amâti, or &c.</i>	they, &c.

FIRST PERFECT.

<i>Fui amâto, or amâta</i>	I was loved
<i>Fosti amâto, or &c.</i>	thou wast, &c.
<i>Fu amâto, or &c.</i>	he was, &c.
<i>Fummo amâti, or amâte</i>	we were, &c.
<i>Foste amâti, or &c.</i>	you, &c.
<i>Fûrono amâti, or &c.</i>	they, &c.

SECOND PERFECT.

<i>Sono stato amâto, or stata amâta</i>	I have been loved
<i>Sei stato amâto, or &c.</i>	thou hast been, &c.
<i>E stato amâto, or &c.</i>	he or she has, &c.
<i>Siâmo stati amâti, or state amâte</i>	we have been, &c.
<i>Siête stati amâti, or &c.</i>	you, &c.
<i>Sono stati amâti, or &c.</i>	they, &c.

FIRST PLUPERFECT.

<i>Era stato amâto, or stata amâta</i>	I had been loved
<i>Eri stato amâto, or &c.</i>	thou hadst, &c.
<i>Era stato amâto, or &c.</i>	he or she had, &c.
<i>Eravamo stati amâti, or state amâte</i>	we had been loved
<i>Eravate stati amâti, or &c.</i>	you, &c.
<i>Erano stati amâti, or &c.</i>	they, &c.

SECOND PLUPERFECT.

<i>Fui stato amâto, or stata amâta</i>	I had been loved
<i>Fosti stato amâto, or &c.</i>	thou hadst, &c.
<i>Fu stato amâto, or &c.</i>	he or she had, &c.
<i>Fummo stati amâti, or state amâte</i>	we had been loved

Foste stati amati, or &c.

you, &c.

Fùrono stati amati, or &c.

they, &c.

FUTURE.

Sarò amato, or amata

I shall be loved

Sarai amato, or &c.

thou shalt, &c.

Sarà amato, or &c.

he shall, &c.

Saremo amati, or amate

we shall be loved

Sarete amati, or &c.

you, &c.

Saranno amati, or &c.

they, &c.

After the same manner are conjugated the imperative, conjunctive, and infinitive moods of all verbs of whatever conjugation, that may become passive.

By the above conjugation it is evident that the Participles of passive verbs always change their termination, as the adjectives do, from masculine into feminine, and from singular into plural, and always agree with the nominative case of the sentence, according to its gender and number.

The Preposition *By*, or *By the*, used in an English sentence, whose verb is passive, is translated in Italian by the article of the ablative case, as. *La figlia è più amata dalla madre*; the daughter is more loved by the mother. *Il figlio è più amato dal padre*; the son is more loved by the father. *Le madri sono più amate dalle figlie*; the mothers are more loved by their daughters. *I padri sono più amati dai figli*; the fathers are more loved by their sons.

A model of a Reflective Verb.

A *Reflective Verb* is nothing else but an active verb whose action does not pass over upon any object, but returns or reflects upon the agent that produces it ;—and this reflection is marked in Italian by the particles *mi, ti, si, ci, vi* &c. as in the following verb *Lodarsi*.

PRESENT.

<i>Io mi lodo</i>	I praise myself
<i>Tu ti lodi</i>	thou praisest thyself
<i>Egli si loda</i>	he praises himself
<i>Noi ci lodiamo</i>	we praise ourselves
<i>Voi vi lodate</i>	you praise yourselves
<i>Eglino si lodano</i>	they praise themselves

IMPERFECT.

<i>Io mi lodava</i>	I praised myself
<i>Tu ti lodavi</i>	thou praisedst thyself
<i>Egli si lodava</i>	he praised himself
<i>No ci lodavamo</i>	we praised ourselves
<i>Voi vi lodavate</i>	you praised yourselves
<i>Eglino si lodavano</i>	they praised themselves

FIRST PERFECT.

<i>Io mi lodai</i>	I did praise myself
<i>Tu ti lodasti</i>	thou didst praise thyself
<i>Egli si lodò</i>	he did praise himself
<i>Noi ci lodammo</i>	we did praise ourselves
<i>Voi vi lodaste</i>	you did praise yourselves
<i>Eglino si lodarono</i>	they did praise themselves

SECOND PERFECT.

<i>Io mi son lodato, or lodata</i>	I have praised myself
<i>Tu ti sei lodato, or &c.</i>	thou hast praised thyself
<i>Egli si è lodato, or ella &c.</i>	he has praised himself

Noi

Noi ci siámo lodáti, or lodáte we have praised ourselves
Voi vi siéte lodáti, or &c. you have praised yourselves
Eglino si sono lodáti, or they have praised themselves
élleno &c.

FIRST PLUPERFECT.

Io m'era lodáto, or lodáta I had praised myself
Tu t'eri lodáto, or &c. thou hadst praised thyself
Egli s'era lodáto, or ella he or she had praised him-
 &c. self or herself
Noi ci eravámo lodati, or we had praised ourselves
 &c.
Voi v'eraváte lodáti, or &c. you had praised yourselves
Eglino s'érano lodáti, or they had praised themselves
élleno &c.

SECOND PLUPERFECT.

Io mi fui lodáto, or lodata I had praised myself
Tu ti fosti lodato, or &c. thou hadst praised thyself
Egli si fu lodáto, or ella he or she had praised him-
 &c. self, or herself
Noi ci fummo lodáti, or lodáte we had praised ourselves
Voi vi foste lodáti, or &c. you had praised yourselves
Eglino si fúrono lodáti, or they had praised themselves
élleno, &c.

FUTURE.

Io mi loderò I shall praise myself
Tu ti loderái thou shalt praise thyself
Egli, or ella si loderà he or she shall praise himself,
 or herself
Noi ci loderémo we shall praise ourselves
Voi vi loderéte you shall praise yourselves
Eglino or élleno si loderánno they shall praise themselves

IMPERATIVE.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>Lódati</i>	Praise thyself
<i>Lódisi</i>	let him, or her, praise himself, or herself
<i>Lodiámoci</i>	let us praise ourselves
<i>Lodátevi</i>	praise yourselves
<i>Lódinsi</i>	let them praise themselves

CONJUNCTIVE.

<i>Che io mi lodi</i>	That I praise myself
<i>Che tu ti lodi</i>	that thou praise thyself
<i>Ch' egli, or ella, si lodi</i>	that he, or she, praise him- self, or herself
<i>Che noi ci lodiámo</i>	that we praise ourselves
<i>Che voi vi lodiáte</i>	that you praise yourselves
<i>Ch' églino, or élleno, si lódino</i>	that they praise themselves.

FIRST IMPERFECT.

<i>Io mi loderéi</i>	I should praise myself
<i>Tu ti loderésti</i>	thou shouldst praise thyself
<i>Egli, or ella, si loderébbe</i>	he, or she, should praise him- self, or herself
<i>Noi ci loderémmo</i>	we should praise ourselves
<i>Voi vi loderéste</i>	you should praise yourselves
<i>Eglino, or élleno, si loderébbero</i>	they should praise themselves

SECOND IMPERFECT.

<i>Se io mi lodássi</i>	if I should praise myself
<i>Se tu ti lodássi</i>	if thou shouldst praise thyself
<i>S' egli, or ella, si lodásse</i>	if he, or she, should praise himself, or herself

<i>Se noi ci lodássimo</i>	if we should praise ourselves
<i>Se voi vi lodáste</i>	if you should praise your-
	selves
<i>S' églino, or élleno si lodás-</i>	if they should praise them-
<i>sero</i>	selves

PERFECT.

<i>Quantúnque</i>	Though
<i>Io mi sia lodáto, or lodáta</i>	I have praised myself
<i>Tu ti sii lodáto, or &c.</i>	thou hast praised thyself
<i>Egli si sia lodáto, or ella,</i>	he, or she, have praised him-
<i>&c.</i>	self or herself
<i>Noi ci siámo lodáti,</i>	we have praised ourselves
<i>or lodáte</i>	
<i>Voi vi siáte lodáti, or &c.</i>	you have praised yourselves
<i>Eglino si siano lodáti,</i>	they have praised themselves
<i>or elleno, &c.</i>	

FIRST PLUPERFECT.

<i>Io mi saréi lodáto, or lodata</i>	I should have praised myself
<i>Tu ti sarésti lodáto, or &c.</i>	thou shouldst have praised
	thyself
<i>Egli si sarébbe lodáto</i>	he or she should have praised
<i>or ella &c.</i>	himself or herself
<i>Noi ci sarémmo lodáti,</i>	we should have praised our-
<i>or lodáte</i>	selves
<i>Voi vi saréste lodáti, or &c.</i>	you should have praised
	yourselves
<i>Eglino si sarebbéro lodáti</i>	they should have praised
<i>or elleno, &c.</i>	themselves

SECOND PLUPERFECT.

<i>Se io mi fossi lodáto,</i>	If I had praised myself
<i>or lodáta</i>	

- Se tu ti fossi lodáto*, or *&c.* if thou hadst praised thyself
S' egli si fosse lodáto, if he or she had praised him-
or *ella &c.* self or herself
Se noi ci fóssimo lodáti, if we had praised ourselves
or *lodáte*
Sé voi vi foste lodáti, if you had praised yourselves
or *&c.*
S' églino si fóssero lodáti, if they had praised themselves
or *élleno &c.*

FUTURE.

- Quando* When
Io mi sarò lodáto, or *lodáta* I shall have praised myself
Tu ti sarái lodáto, or *&c.* thou shalt have praised thy-
self
Egli si sarà lodáto, or *&c.* he or she shall have praised
himself or herself
Noi ci sarémo lodáti, we shall have praised our-
or *lodáte* selves
Voi vi saréte lodáti, or *&c.* you shall have praised your-
selves
Eglino si saránno lodáti, they shall have praised them-
or *&c.* selves

INFINITIVE.

- Lodársi* to praise one's self

PERFECT.

- Essersi lodáto* to have praised ones' self

GERUND.

- Lodándosei* praising one's self

Con, or col lodársi
In, or nel lodársi

in, or by praising one's self

PARTICIPLE.

Lodátosi, lodátasi

praised one's self

Lodátisi, lodátèsi

praised themselves

Thus are conjugated all verbs that admit in their Infinitive the particle *si*, as *dolérsi*, *pentírsi*, *rallegrársi*, &c; and that particle may be admitted by all those verbs that refer the action, or passion they express to a person.

The *Reciprocal* verbs are the same as the *Reflective* one's; with the only difference, that the action of the *reflective* relates to the agent that produces it; but the action of the *reciprocal* is partaken of by other persons, as *scriversi lettere*, *farsi dé complimenti*, &c.

LECTURE XX.

On the impersonal Verbs.

The impersonal verbs may be divided into *proper*, and *improper*; the *proper* are those which have only the third person singular through all moods and tenses, as

Proper im-
personal
Verbs.

Dilúvia

it rains very hard

Grándina

it hails

Fa caldo

it is hot

Fa freddo

it is cold

Ghiaccia

it freezes

Dighiaccia

it thaws

Névea

<i>Névic</i>	it snows
<i>Baléna, or lampéggia</i>	it lightens
<i>Piôve</i>	it rains
<i>Tuóna</i>	it thunders
<i>Oscúra</i>	it grows dark
<i>Tempésta</i>	it hails

The *improper* are those which are not impersonal by themselves, as the above, but only impersonally used, and may have both the third persons singular, and plural, and agree with the number of the noun, or pronoun spoken of, as

<i>Avviéne</i>	<i>avvéngono</i> or	it happens	Improper impersonal Verbs.
<i>Accáde</i>	<i>accádono</i>		
<i>Bisógna</i>	<i>bisógnano</i>	it must	
<i>Basta</i>	<i>bástano</i>	it is enough	
<i>Non impórta</i>	<i>non impórtano</i>	it is no matter	
<i>Non occórre</i>	<i>non occórrono</i>	there is no occasion	
<i>Non paré</i>	<i>non páiono</i>	it does non seem	
<i>Non bisógna</i>	<i>non bisógnano</i>	there is no need	

Such verbs impersonally used may also be conjugated with the derivative pronouns, as

<i>M' accáde</i>	it happens to me
<i>M' aggráda</i>	it agrees with me
<i>Ti dispiáce</i>	thou art displeased
<i>V' impórta</i>	it is important to you
<i>Vi piáce</i>	it pleases you
<i>Gli, or le accáde</i>	it happens to him, or her
<i>Ci basterà</i>	it will be enough for us
<i>Vi occorrerà</i>	it will be necessary to you

The most part of the active verbs may become *improper impersonal* by the help of the pronoun *si* either
T 2 before

before or after the verb, as *si dice*, or *dicesi*, people say, they say, or it is said; *si parla*, or *párlasi*, it is talked of; *si ama*, or *ámasi*, they love; *si vede*, or *védesi*, they see. In regard to these verbs, it must be observed that if the noun that follows them is in the singular number, the verb must be put in the singular; if the noun is in the plural, the verb must be likewise put in the plural, as

<i>Si loda il soldáto</i>	they praise the soldier
<i>Si lódano i soldáti</i>	they praise the soldiers
<i>Si biásima il vízio</i>	they blame vice
<i>Si biásimano i vizi</i>	they blame vices

But if the plural noun is preceded by an article of the genitive case, the verb is to be of the singular number, as *si parla di guérre*, they talk of wars; *si discorre delle cose passáte*, they discourse upon past things, we cannot say *si párlano*, *si discórrono*, &c.

Conjugation of the Verb éssere impersonally used.

This verb when impersonally used is preceded by the adverbs of place *ci* and *vi*, either retrenched or not; * as will be seen in the following examples.

C'è, or *v'è*, there is; *ci*, or *vi sono*, there are. *C'era*, or *v'era*, there was. *C'erano*, or *v'erano*, there were. *Ci*, or *vi*

* *Ci* is used in speaking of a person or thing which are in the same place, where we are. *Vi* is used when we speak of a person or thing which are in a place, where we are not.

vi fu, there was. *Ci*, or *vi furono*, there were. *C' è*, How to express in Italian there is or *v' è stato*, or *stata*, there has been. *Ci*, or *vi sono stati*, or *state*, there have been. *C' era*, or *v' era stato*, or there are or *stata*, there had been. *C' erano*, or *v' erano stati*, &c. or *state*, there had been. *Ci*, or *vi sarà stato*, or &c, there will be. *Ci*, or *vi saranno stati*, or &c, there will be. *Ci*, or *vi sia*, let there be. *Ci*, or *vi siano*, let there be. *Che ci*, or *vi sia*, that there be. *Che ci* or *vi siano*, that there be. *Ci*, or *vi sarebbe*, there would be. *Ci*, or *vi sarebbero*, there would be. *Se ci*, or *vi fosse*, if there should be. *Se ci*, or *vi fossero*, if there should be. *Esserci*, or *esservi*, to be there. * *Essendoci*, or *essendovi*, being there.

Ci and *vi* most commonly are placed before the verb, but they may also be put after it ; as *ci è*, or *ecci*,

* *To be there*, when followed by the general pronouns some of *it*, some of *them*, is translated in Italian by *essercene*, or *esservene*, viz. to be there some of it, or them : as *cene*, or *ven' è*, there is some of it, or them. *Non ven'era*, or *non cen' era*, there was none of it, or them. *Vene*, or *cene sarà molto* there will be much of it, or them, &c.

Though the impersonal Infinitive *to be there* is incorrect in English, it is used here for want of a better to express the Italian Infinitive, viz. *essercene*, or *esservene*.

The particle *it* when before the verb *to be*, especially in speaking of time, is not expressed in Italian; as how many years, months, days, or hours is it? It is four at least. *Quanti anni, mesi, giorni, or ore sono? Sono quattro almeno?* is it black? *è nero?* is it white? *è bianco?* it is very handsome, *è bellissimo*.

The impersonal verb *it is*, in the following instances, is expressed by *fa* (makes) as, it is hot: it is cold: it is fine weather: it is windy: it is moon-light: it is dark: *fa caldo; fa freddo: fa bel tempo: fa vento: fa chiaro di luna: fa oscuro.*

ecci, vi è, or evvi, vi era, or éravì, vi fu, or fuvvi. vi sarà, or sarávvì, &c.

Remarks on
ci, and *vi*.

In asking a question, either affirmatively, or negatively, the English adverb *there* is put after the verb; but *ci* and *vi* are placed before it; as is *there*? *C'è*, or *v'è*? is *there* not? *Non c'è*, or *non v'è*? In Italian it is only by the sign of interrogation in writing, and by the interrogative tone in speaking, that we distinguish an interrogative expression from an affirmative one.

Ci and *vi*, as adverbs of place, are also equivalent to *here*, *there*, and *within*; as *ella non ci verrà oggi*, she will not come here to-day; *noi non vi andremo dománi*, we shall not go there to-morrow: *Iéri venni a casa vostra per trovarvi, ma voi non vi eraváte*, I went yesterday to your house to see you, but you were not *within*.

Ci sometimes means of *it*, or on *it*, as in the following example: *Pénsaci, e poi del mio destin decidi*, think of it, and then decide my fate.

EXERCISES.

That there has or have been. There would have
Che
been. When there shall have been. To have been
quándo
there. Having been there. I was there almost all
quasi tutto
the afternoon. At what time did you go there? She
dopo pranzo *tempo* *andáre*
will

will not be within to-morrow- I saw many people
dománi vedére gran gen-
 there. You will not come here to-day. Have they
te oggi
 dined there. You have three horses, lend me one of
dennàre cavállo imprestàre
 them. I see very fine flowers in your garden, give
vedére bello fióre giardíno dare
 me some of them. They have but five or six of them.
cinque sei
 They talk of it all over the Island. For there having
parláre in tutta Isola
 been too much of it.
troppo

Of the Participles.

The Participles may be divided into three sorts, viz. *active*, *passive*, and *absolute*. Participles
divided into
Active.

The *Active* Participles are those which are united to the Verb *Avére*; as, *ho amáto*; *avéva vedúto*; *avrò capíto*.

The *Passive* Participles are those which are preceded by the Verb *Essere*; as, *sono amáto*, *era credúto*, *sarò favorito*. Passive.

The *Absolute* are composed of the Gerunds *avéndo*, or *esséndo*; as *avéndo amáto*; *esséndo favorito*, &c. * Absolute.

Now

* *Having*, and *being*, are very often suppressed in Italian, as in the following examples:

Having done that	<i>fatto quésto</i>
Having said so	<i>detto ciò</i>

The

Now it must be observed. that the above Participles sometimes change their Gender and Number, and sometimes do not. The following Rules will shew when, and in what manner they are to agree with the substantives to which they relate.

When declinable, or indeclinable

I. All *Active* Participles retain their termination in *O*; as, *la Regina ha ordinato*, the Queen has ordered. *I soldati hanno combattuto*, the soldiers have fought.

II. If after the Participle there is an accusative case, it may either agree with it or not both in Gender and Number; as, *ho ricevuto*, or *ricevute le vostre lettere*, I have received your letters. *Ho veduto*, or *veduta una bella Signora*, I have seen a fine lady. *Abbiamo vinto*, or *vinta la partita*, we have won the game.

III. But if the Accusative precedes the Participle, then the Participle must agree with it; as *la grazia, che voi m'avete accordata*, the favour you have granted me. *Le lettere che voi avete scritte*, the letters you have written. *Il libro, che mi fu mandato*, the book which has been sent to me.

IV. The Participles of many neuter, or Impersonal Verbs which do not govern an Accusative next to them, and which in their compound tenses are always conjugated with the verb *avere*, never change their termination; as *ella ha dormito bené*, she has slept well. *Esse hanno camminato troppo*, they have walked too much.

The Comedy being ended	<i>finita la commedia</i>
Having seen him	<i>vedutolo</i>
Having perceived it	<i>aecortosene</i>

much. *Le mie sorelle non hanno ancora desinato*, my sisters have not dined yet. *La Regina ha cenato col Re*, the Queen has supped with the King.

V. When the Participle is before an Infinitive Verb, it is indeclinable; as *il Re ha fatto loro tagliare il capo*, the King has caused their heads to be cut off. *Le mie cugine hanno creduto di morire*, my cousins thought that they were to die. *

VI. The *Passive* Participles agree always in gender and number with the substantive; as, *la virtù è stimata*, or *vièn stimata*, † virtue is esteemed. *Il pigro è biasimato*, the lazy is blamed. *I soldati sono tornati dalla guerra*, the soldiers are returned from the war. *I prigionieri sono fuggiti*, the prisoners have made their escape out of prison. *Le vostre sorelle si sono battute* your sisters have fought,

EXERCISES.

On the Participles.

I have received the books which my sisters had sent

<i>ricevere</i>	<i>libro</i>	<i>sorella mandare</i>
	U	me

* If the Infinitive is preceded by some of the relative Pronoun, then the Participle is declinable; as *più non esiste questa moda*, noi l'abbiamo veduta cadere a dì nostri, this fashshion does not exist any more, we have seen it to fall. *Gli amici vostri sono partiti*, non li ho potuti tenere, your friends are gone, I could not stop them.

† In Italian we often use with great propriety the verb *venire*, instead of the verb *essere*; as *l'ubbriachezza vièn bias-*

me. I have read them all; they are well written.

leggere tutto scritto

The letter which my father wrote to me is very severe.

lettera padre scrisse severo

My dear friends, I have always loved you like my

caro amico sempre amare come

children. I have often admonished you for your

figliuolo spesso ammonire

own good. I met your brother this morning; we

proprio bene incontrare fratello mattina

embraced one another like good friends. These are

abbracciarsi buono

all the copies which you have given me to write.

copia dare scrivere.

LECTURE XXI.

On Prepositions exemplified.

All Prepositions in Italian govern some of the oblique cases; some govern one, some two, and others three, as will be seen in the following examples.

Prepositions governing the Accusative case.	<i>Venite con me, or meco</i>	Come with me
	<i>Parlo per voi</i>	I speak for you
	<i>La veggo ogni giorno eccetto le Domeniche</i>	I see her every day Sundays excepted
	<i>Avanti ogni cosa</i>	Before every other thing

Mi

biasimata da tutti, drunkenness is blamed by every body.

Eglio verranno lodati, they shall be praised. *Mi vien detto*,

I have been told.

Mi régolo sacóndo le cir- I act according to circum-
costánze stances

Andrò in campagna fra, I will go into the country in
or tra una settimána a week

Mi trovo fra, or tra gente I find myself among un-
ingráta grateful people

Tra or fra voi, e me, c' é between you and me there is
gran differénza a great difference

Incirca l' affáre di vostro about the affair of your
fratéllo brother

Voi chiacchieráte come un you chatter like a parrot
papagállo

Chi può andár contro, Who can go against for- Governing
the Accu-
sative, or
Genitive.
or contra la, or della tune?
fortúna ?

Dopo quéstó, or di quéstó after that he set out
partì

E' nascósto diétro la, or della he is hid behind the door
porta

Non posso vedér entro, I cannot see in, or within
or dèntro il, or del your heart
vostro cuóre

Egli corre verso me, or di he runs towards me
me

Non posso star senza voi, I cannot stay without you
or senza di voi

Vedéndoci córrere verso il, in seeing us run towards
or del ponte the bridge

Guardáte al didéntro del Look inwards or in the inside Governing
the Geni-
tive case
castéllo of the castle

Non vedéte nulla al difuóri you see nothing outwards or
della casa in the outside of the house

A guisa di coloro, che parlano senza sapere like those who speak without knowledge
Appiè della montagna vi scorre un ruscello at the foot of the mountain runs a rivulet
All'intorno della città si vede gran nebbia round the city you see a great fog
Allato del mio palazzo close to my palace

Governing
the Dative

Dirimpetto, or rimpetto Over against my garden
al mio giardino
Inquanto al nostro viaggio, with respect to our journey
ne parleremo poi we shall speak in another time
Sino, or fino, insino, or infino al giorno d'oggi le cose van male until to day the affairs go badly

Governing
the Genitive, Dative,
or Accusative.

Appresso di, a, or Vossignoria By you Sir, Madam, or Miss
Andiamo vicino, or presso della, alla, or la torre let us go near the tower
Quando saremo giunti dirimpetto del, al, or il fiume when we are arrived over against the river
E' caduto sotto della, alla, or la tavola it is fallen down under the table
Io l'ho messo sopra della, alla, or la seggiola I have put it upon the chair
Passeggiavamo lungo del, al, or il fiume we were walking along the river
Oltre di, a, or ciò besides that

Governing
the Genitive or Ablative.

Quando fummo di là del, or dal lago When we were on the other side of the lake

Ora,

Ora, che siámo di quà del, now we are on this side of
 or *dal Tamígi* the Thames
Trovándomi lontáno della, in finding myself far from
 or *dalla mia pátria* my country
Siam molto lungi di, or da we are very far from your
casa vostra house
Noi fummo iéri dal Signóre, we had been yesterday at
 or *in casa della Signóra* Mr, or Mrs.

EXERCISES

On the above Prepositions.

Lean against the wall. He is with his cousins.
Appoggiársi muro *cugino*
 Since that time he is always before, or behind. They
da tempo sempre
 are on the other side the bridge. She has jumped
ponte saltáre
 over the table. Look under, and upon the bed.
távola guardáre letto
 Let us divide that between us. He walks towards
dividere passeggiáre
 the city. Be civil towards every body. It is about
città civile tutti
 six o'clock. I have bought that for you. They
le sei comperáre
 were amongst the populace. He works whilst the
gentágia lavoráre
 others play. According to my opinion he is in the
giuocáre parére ha torto
 wrong. Act according to our rule. Take them all
agíre régola préndere tutto
 except

except these two. It is on account of her temper.

due

umóre

Besides your being ignorant, you are obstinate. In

èssere ignoránte

ostinátó

regard, or with respect to you I say nothing. He lives

dire nulla

stare

over against the exchange. Let us walk along the

cámbo

passeggiáre

rivulet. He is near his journey's end. She is out of

ruscèllo

viággio fine

danger. He does not live far. Stay till to morrow.

perícólo

sta

aspettáre

dománi

As for me I do not know her. They come after me.

conóscere

veníre

LECTURE XXII:

On Adverbs exemplified.

1st person singular
Adverbs of *Ora son pronto*

time 3^d person singular *Adèssó ella può veníre*

Venga oggi, o dománi

Now I am ready

now you * may come

come to day, or to mor-

row

1st pⁿ sing *Verrò fra poco, or adèss'*
adèssó

I shall come by and by

except: X *Fátelo súbito súbito*

do that directly

2^d person *Era quì iéri, or iéri l'altro*
3^d person sing. *or l'altriéri*

he was here yesterday or
the day before

* In this as well as in all the following examples the Pronoun *you* is translated in Italian by the Pronoun *ella* or by *Vossignoría*, in order to accustom the scholar to the Italian ceremony spoken of page 77.

Venga

p.ⁿ sig. Venga tosto, che è chiámato come instantly when you
are called

Cammini presto walk fast

Ieri l'altro, or avantiéri the other day he came to
venne a trovármí see me

L' última volta che 'l vidi the last time I saw him.

Gli fece una vísita il dì pre- she paid him a visit the
cedénte day before.

Ella imparáva bene altre you learned well former-
volte ly.

Si credéva ciò né tempi pas- they believed that in the
sáti days of yore.

Beva prima drink first or before

L' ha maritáta recente- he has married her lately.
ménte

Io era da lui iéri mattina I was at his house yester-
day morning.

Morì iéri sera he died yesternight.

Incominciai la settimána I began last week.
passáta

Io v' era, or era là l' anno I was there last year.
passáto

Finquì, or sinquì non ha hitherto he has not spoken
detto una paróla a word.

Ella ha ben fatto fin, or sin you have done right till
ora now

L' incontrái otto giòrni fa, I met him eight days ago.
or sono

Sono quíndici giòrni ch' è he has been gone this
partíto fortnight.

Non è lungo tempo, or lunga It is not long since he was
pezza, ch' egli era quì here.

<i>E qualche tempo dacchè è ritornato</i>	he has been back some time.
<i>Non è ch' un momento ch' è uscito</i>	he has been gone out but a moment.
<i>Son' otto giórni ch' è ammalato</i>	he has been sick these eight days.
<i>Noi v' andrémo, or andrémo là dománi, domán l' altro, or dopo dománi</i>	we shall go there to morrow, or after to morrow.
<i>Il dì dopo le sue nozze mi lasciò</i>	the day after his marriage he left me.
<i>Gli tenni diétro il giórno seguente</i>	I followed him the day after, or following.*
<i>Vi vada questa mattina, or stamattina, questo dopo pranzo, questa sera, or stasséra</i>	go thither this morning, this afternoon, or this night.
<i>Partirà ben presto, or fra poco</i>	he will set out soon, or shortly.
<i>Venga tantosto</i>	come by and by.
<i>Ella comincerà da quì a un anno</i>	she will begin a year hence.
<i>Da quì innánzi non gli parlerò più</i>	henceforth I shall speak to him no more.
<i>Tra, or fra quáttro giórni mio padre ritornerà</i>	four days hence my father will come.
<i>Dapprima non disse nulla</i>	at first he said nothing.

Ella

* To follow somebody is expressed in Italian by *tener diétro ad uno*.

- Ella mi distúrba ad ogni moménto* you disturb me every minute.
- Quándo la rivedrò? or la vedrò di nuóvo* when shall I see you again?
- Ella non mi rivedrà mai più* you shall never see me again.
- Lo invito di rado* I seldom invite him.
- Sono qualche volta in città* they are sometimes in town.
- Egli è spesso fuóri di casa* he is often out.
- Ella non parla quási mai* she hardly ever speaks.
- Scrivéteci quánto prima* write to us as soon as possible.
- M' aspétti alle tre al più presto* expect me at three o'clock at soonest.
- Verrò alle quattro al più tardi* I shall come at four, at farthest
- Non è quási mai in casa* he is hardly ever at home
- Ella ciárta come all'ordinário* she prates as usual.
- Nulladiméno, or nonostánte voi siéte quasi sempre insiéme, or assiéme* nevertheless you are almost always together.
- Presto, o tardi egli perirà* sooner or later he will perish.
- D' ordinario ella viéne o troppo presto, o troppo tardi* you commonly come either too soon, or too late.
- Venga di buón ora, or per tempo* come early, or in good time.
- Esce di gran mattino* he goes out early.
- E' egli giúnto, or arriváto? non ancóra, or non peranche.* is he arrived? not yet.

- Allóra egli escì; e da quel tempo in poi, non l' ho più veduto.* then he went out; and since that time I have not seen him.
- Quándo verrà ella? nella mattina, o nel dopo pranzo?* when will you come? in the morning, or, in the afternoon?
- Venga sulla sera; o di notte tempo.* come in the evening, or in the night
- Da quel tempo in poi, or d' allóra in poi, non la vide più.* from that time he saw her no more.
- Noi lo faremo, or faremo ciò a nostr' ágio* we shall do that at leisure.
- La rapì sul bel meriggio* he carried her off at noon-day.
- Io vo, or vado a trovarla un giòrno sì un giòrno no.* I go to see her every day.
- Lo fáccia tutto ad un tratto* do that all at once.
- Stúdia più che mai* She studies more than ever.
- Ella viéne molto a propósito, or ad ora molto opportúna* you come very seasonably.
- Mene servo nell' occasione, or nel bisógno* I make use of it upon occasion.
- Disparì in un bátter d' óchio* he disappeared in the twinkling of an eye.
- Impára ogni giòrno* she learns every day.

Si fermi quì

stay there.

Dove va in tanta fretta

where are you going so fast ?

Adverbs of Place.

D' onde viène ?

from whence do you come ?

Per dove é ella passáto ?

which way did you pass ?

Da dove viène ?

where does he come from ?

Venga di quì

come this way.

Perchè vién ella sì tardi ?

why do you come so late ?

Vi sono due míglia da quì a là

it is two miles from hence thither.

Quánto c' è da quì a casa vostra ?

how far is it from hence to your house ?

Passiámo di quì

let us pass this way.

Chi v' è sopra ?

who is up there ?

Guárdi là basso

look yonder.

Guárdi quì sotto

look under here.

Cominci di sopra

begin upward

Finísca abbáso

make an end downward.

Passeggiámo sù, e giù

let us walk up and down.

Egli era dentro, ed io fuóri

he was within, and I without.

Sin dove è ella stata ?

how far have you been ?

Sono stato sin, or fin là

I have been thus far.

L' ha gettáto a terra

he has thrown him upon the ground.

L' ho vedúto da vicíno

I have seen him close ?

Vediámolo più da vicíno

let us see that nearer.

Lo metta da parte

put that aside.

E' sul davánti della casa

he is on the forepart of the house.

Non è conténta in nezzún luó-

she is satisfied no where,

<i>Andiámo dunque altróve</i>	let us go elsewhere then.
<i>Li ho cercáti dapertutto</i>	I have looked for them every where.
<i>Venga di quésa parte</i>	come on this side.
<i>Vada da quélla parte</i>	go on that side.
<i>Vada a destra</i>	turn to the right.
<i>L' inségna è a man sinístra</i>	the sign is on the left hand.
<i>Vada dritto</i>	walking staight along.
<i>Sono cadúto da alto a basso</i>	I fell from the top to the bottom.

Adverbs of
Order.

<i>Fáccia ciò primieraménte</i>	do that first.
<i>Leggiámo un dopo l' altro</i>	let us read by turns.
<i>Camminiámo di fila, or di fronte</i>	let us walk abreast.
<i>Una, due, tre volte, &c.</i>	once, twice, three times, &c.
<i>Tutto è sotto sopra, or sos- sopra</i>	all is topsy-turvy.
<i>Ella fa tutto per metá</i>	you do every thing by halves.
<i>Quánto costa quésito fazzo- létto ?</i>	ho much does this hand- kerchief cost ?
<i>Quánto tempo è che Vossi- gnoría è quì ?</i>	how long have you been here ?
<i>Quánto tempo è ch' egli è escíto ?</i>	how long has he been out ?
<i>Da quándo in poi è egli ve- núto in città</i>	how long is it since he came to town ?
<i>Dátemi un tantín di vino ?</i>	give me ever so little wine.

E'ccone

- E'ccone abbastánza, e più* there is enough, and more
che non bisógna than enough.
- Vossignoria mene da sempre* you give me always too
o troppo, o non abbastán- much, or too little.
za
- Facciám quèsta cosa a poco* let us do that little, by lit-
a poco tle.
- E' presso a poco tanto grande* he is almost as tall as you.
quánto voi
- Ho diciassétt' anni al più* I am seventeen at most.
- Le do cinqu' anni sopra il* I give you five years into
mercáto the bargain.
- Alménó non manchi* however, or at least, do
not fail.
- Ha diéci ghinée per il me-* he has ten guineas at least.
no
- Ha del denáro in gran có-* he has money in plenty.
pia
- Egli da a piene mani.* he gives largely.
- Gliélo venderò a buón mer-* I shall sell it you cheap.
cáto
- V. S. l' avrà a migliór* you shall have it cheaper.
mercáto, or più a pia-
cére

Ciò mi tocca sul vivo

that touches me to the
quick.

Adverbs of
Quality.

Sta molto male ne' suói af-
fári

he is very low in his cir-
cumstances.

Ella ópera trascurataménte
Lo sa a fondo

you act carelessly.
she knows that thoroughly.

L

<i>Le verrò incontro a metà cammino</i>	I will meet you half-way.
<i>Ha appena il senso comune</i>	he has scarce common-sense.
<i>Fa tutto di mala voglia</i>	you do everything against the grain.
<i>Lo faccia volentieri, or di buon cuore, or di buona voglia</i>	do it willingly. or heartily, or with a willing mind.
<i>Non fo nulla a talento mio</i>	I do nothing to my mind.
<i>Le torna ciò a grado ? or le va a piacere ?</i>	Is that to your mind. ?
<i>Che ciascuno agisca a piacer suo, or a suo gusto</i>	let every one act to his mind.
<i>Ella gli ha fatto il suo vero ritratto</i>	you have drawn his picture to the life.
<i>Faccia due passi in dietro</i>	make two steps backward.
<i>Caddi rovescione</i>	I fell backward.
<i>Noi camminammo all' oscuro</i>	we walked groaping.
<i>Ella lo maltratta a torto, or ingiustamente</i>	you use him ill wrongfully.
<i>Ella agisce per malizia</i>	you act out of ill-nature.
<i>L' ha fatto per ischerzo</i>	he has done it in jest.
<i>Lo feci per isbaglio</i>	I have done it by mistake.
<i>L' ho incontrato a caso</i>	I have met him by chance.
<i>Vi andrò a qualunque costo</i>	I shall go there, let the worst go to the worst.
<i>Spiateli da vicino</i>	watch them narrowly.
<i>Lo vuol avere ad ogni modo, or per forza</i>	she will have him by all means.
<i>Andiamo a piedi</i>	let us go on foot.
<i>V' andrò a cavallo</i>	I shall go on horseback.

Ella

<i>Ella v' andrà in battello</i>	you shall go in a boat.
<i>Non ho dato nè più nè meno</i>	I gave neither more or less.
<i>Noi siámo ambidúe d' accór- do</i>	we have agreed on both sides.
<i>Se ho fatto ciò per lei, tanto più lo farò per lui</i>	If I have done that for you, I shall do it much more for him.

<i>Sì, mio caro fratello</i>	yes, my dear brother.
<i>Lo farò davvero, or in verità</i>	I shall do it indeed.
<i>Sì, veramente, melo disse</i>	yes, truly, he told it me.
<i>Ella, or Vossignoria ha ben ragione</i>	you are much in the right.
<i>Per dir il vero, or la veri- tà ha torto</i>	to tell the truth he is in the wrong
<i>Sì davvero</i>	yes, truly.
<i>V' acconsento volentieri</i>	I consent to it willingly.
<i>No, nè l' amo, nè 'l temo</i>	No : I neither love nor fear him.
<i>Non lo eredo</i>	I do not believe it.
<i>Non è punto cambiata</i>	she is not at all changed.
<i>Forze verrà</i>	perhaps he will come.
<i>E perchè no ?</i>	why not ?
<i>Lo farò probabilménte</i>	I shall do it probably:
<i>Ciò può essere</i>	that may be.
<i>Ella agirà così, or in ques- ta maniera</i>	you shall act thus, or, so.
<i>Vada così</i>	walk so.
<i>Ella dice di sì, ed io dico di no.</i>	you say yes, and I say no.

Adverbs of
affirmation,
negation,
&c.

Of Conjunctions exemplified.

<i>Con patto, che verrà domani</i>	on condition that he will come to-morrow.
<i>Per paura di dispiacerle</i>	for fear of displeasing you.
<i>Per dir il vero non è gran ché, or gran cosa</i>	to tell the truth it is no great thing.
<i>Donde viéne, ch' ella è così mesto</i>	how comes it that you are so sad.
<i>Affine di perfezionarla</i>	in order to perfect yourself.
<i>Affinchè V. S. gli scriva *</i>	in order that you may write to him.
<i>A propósito, che ora è? or che ora egli è? †</i>	now I think on't, what is it o'clock?
<i>A che, or a qual propósito ha egli detto ciò</i>	to what purpose has he said that?
<i>Può appena camminare</i>	he can scarce walk.
<i>A meno, che V. S. non venga subito ‡</i>	unless you come.
<i>A meno, che ella si spicci, non potrà sopraggiugnerlo</i>	unless you make haste you will not be able to overtake him.
<i>A misúra, ch' essi entrano, or che gli uni entrano, gli altri escono</i>	as they come in, the others go out.

Quand'.

* *Affinchè* governs a verb in the Conjunctive Present, or Second Imperfect.

† *Egli* is here a mere expletive.

‡ *A meno che* governs a verb in the Conjunctive with the Negative *non* before it.

Quánd'anche non voléssero though even they would
not.

*In caso, ch' ella venga, en-
tri per la porta del giar-
dino* in case you come, get in at
the garden door.

*In vece di ciò, egli spende
tutto il suo ** instead of that he spends
all his wealth.

*Vale a dire, or cioè a dire,
che V. S. non verrà pun-
to* that is as much as to say,
that you will not come.

Ben, or assái lungi da ciò far from that.
*E' per quèsto, ch' io son venù-
to* it is for that I came.

E' V. S. d' accórho, o no ? have you agreed or no ?
Tanto più la stimo, quánto I esteem her so much the
maggiór pena si prende more that she takes
pains.

*Dacchè V. S. è quì io non
impáro nulla* since you are here I learn
nothing.

Di maniera chè ella può fare so that you may do what
ciò che le piáce you please.

Tosto, or súbito che V. S. as soon as you are dressed
*sarà vestito, esciré-
mo* we shall go out.

In tanto, or frattáto io in the mean while I shall
leggerò un capitolo read a chapter.

Posto, or in caso che venga, in case he comes, make
lo fáccia entráre him come in.

Y

Ad

* *Spendere* or *consumáre il suo*, means to spend, or waste
away one's own property ; as *consumáre l' altrui* means to
waste away the property of another.

<i>Ad ogni maniera le parli</i>	be it as it will, speak to him.
<i>Non già ch' io voléssi privármelo</i>	not that I would deprive him of it.
<i>Nemmén io l' accérto</i>	nor I neither, I assure you.
<i>Venga quì, altriménti io verrò a préndarla</i>	come hither, or else I shall go and fetch you.
<i>S' ella restásse là, or vi restásse, verréi a trovarla *</i>	if you were to stay there, I would go and see you.
<i>Oltre ciò, or oltredichè ella gli dirà, che &c.</i>	besides that, you will tell him that, &c.
<i>Allóra noi partirémo insième</i>	then we shall set off together
<i>Vale a dire, ch' ella non intènde ciò</i>	that is to say, that you do not understand it.
<i>Posto che V. S. désini con noi</i>	provided you dine with us.
<i>Fo'icchè ella ha tanta fretta, sene vada</i>	since you are in such a hurry go your ways.
<i>Ben lungi da ciò amico mio</i>	far from it, my friend.
<i>Son ben lungi, or lontáno dallo sprezzár nezzúno</i>	I am far from despising any body.
<i>In quel mentre egli arrivò</i>	In the mean while he arrived.
<i>Sù di che un di loro gli disse</i>	whereupon one of them said to him.
<i>Finchè ella sarà diligénte, ognúno lo loderà</i>	as long as you are diligent every body will praise you.
<i>Altriménti, or se no, sarà disprezzáta</i>	if not you will be despised.

Affatto

* Si generally governs a verb in the Second Imperfect.

- Affatto or giústo lo stesso di* just as that which you
quéllo, ch' ella comprò bought.
Simile a quéllo, &c. like that, &c.
Talméntechè, di maniera so that he returned no
chè, or così chè non ri- more.
tornò più
Ogni volta, or tutte le volte every time you see him.
che lo vedrà
Sia, che parli, o no whether he speaks, or not.
Non ne parli più, che ciò do not speak of it any
mi reca dolore more, for it gives me
 pain.
Vel' ha promesso, ma non le she has promised it you,
creda, or non le dia fede but do not believe her.
Perchè ella s' ingánna because she often mis-
spesso, or spesse volte, or takes.
spesse fiáte
V. S. vede come son mal- you see how ill they use
trattati them.
E' perchè son forestiéri, or it is because they are fo-
è per ésser forestiéri reigners,
Oltre a ciò dícale, che si moreover tell him to make
spicci, or fáccia presto haste.
Fáccia anche questo, or ciò do that also.
Súbito, che ritórna, io esco as soon as you come back,
 I shall go out.
Altriménti saréte gastigáti, otherwise you shall be
sí grandi, che piccioli, or chastised both great and
piccioli small.
Sia che beva, o mangi whether you drink or eat.

Non ostante ciò, or nulladi- nevertheless he has not lost
méno non ha perdúto il histime.
suo tempo
Intánto finirémo however we shall give o-
 ver.

Of Interjections.

Of joy,	<i>Ah ! ah !</i> <i>Su, su,</i> <i>O che allegrezza !</i>	<i>Ah ! ah !</i> come, come oh what joy !
Of grief,	<i>Ah ! ah !</i> <i>Oimè !</i> <i>Aimè !</i> <i>Ahi lasso !</i> <i>Lasso me !</i>	<i>Ah !</i> } <i>Alas !</i>
	<i>Misero me !</i> <i>Oh Dio !</i>	Poor wretch that I am ! O God !
Of aversion,	<i>Oh vergogna</i> <i>Oibò</i> <i>Eh via !</i> <i>Via via !</i>	O for shame ! fie for shame ! } O fie ! O fough !
Of encour- aging.	<i>Animo su,</i> <i>Coraggio,</i> <i>Su presto,</i> <i>Su via,</i> <i>Via su,</i>	chear up take courage } come on, come then

Guardatevi,
State allerta,
State in cervello,

} have a care. Of warning.

Zitto,
Silenzio,
Tacete,

whist, hush.
 silence.
 peace there; hold your tongue.

Of silence.

Bravo!
Oh bravo!
Viva!
Eh viva!
Molto bene!

} O brave! very well!
 exceeding well! well done!

Of approbation.

LECTURE XXIII.

*On the Italian Orthography, viz. Of Diphthongs:
 Of Thriphthongs: Of the Apostrophe: Of
 Alterations in some Words by lengthening or
 Abbreviating; and of Accents.*

Of Diphthongs, or of the meeting of two Vowels
 in one Syllable.

Diphthongs are commonly divided into *distesi*, (long) and *raccolti*, (short). * Those Diphthongs, both vowels of which are equally perceived, are denominated *long*; and those of which the first vowel is hardly

Diphthongs divided into long, and short.

* This definition of Diphthongs, as well as the number here fixed, may perhaps with some reason be criticised, but as any objection on this head can be of little importance to the Scholar; to avoid unnecessary complexity of rules, the above distinction has been adopted.

hardly perceptible, and where the second, or last, is forcibly pronounced, are called *short*. They may be reckoned eighteen in all, viz. nine *long*; and nine *short*.

LONG.

Ae, as *áere*, air
Ai, — *amái*, I loved
Ao, — *Páolo*, Paul
Au, — *augúrio*, an omen
Ea, — *Bórea*, Boreas
Ee — *veeménte*, vehement
Eí, — *Deità*, Deity
Eo, — *Eolo*, Eolus
Eu, — *Európa*, Europe.

SHORT.

Ia, as *piáno*, plain
Ie, — *piéno*, full
Io, — *fióre*, flower
Iu, — *fiúme*, river
Oi, — *oimè*, alas
Ua, — *guáncia*, cheek
Ue, — *quésto*, this
Ui, — *guída*, guide
Uo, — *uómo*, man.

Triph-
thongs and
Quadrip-
thongs.

There are also in the Italian Tongue, *Triphthongs*, and *Quàdriphthongs*, viz. the meeting of three or four vowels together; as *iei* in *miéi*; *uoi* in *tuói*, *iuo* in *giuóco*; *iuoi* in *figliuói*, instead of *figliuóli*, in which all vowels are rapidly pronounced and almost sunk, except those over which is placed an accent. As the knowledge of the Diphthongs, Triphthongs, &c. is more useful for poetry than for prose, this is not the proper place to enlarge further on the subject.

Of the Use of the Apostrophe.

When to
use the apos-
trophe.

Very little remains to be said on the Apostrophe after what has been so often observed on this elision in the Treatise on Articles, Nouns, Pronouns, &c. which I refer to, in order to avoid useless repetitions. The most frequent use of the Apostrophe is made in the
Articles,

Articles, when they precede a Noun beginning with a vowel, as *l' ardóre*, the heat; *l' ánima*, the soul; and very often the elision occurs on the *I.* in *il*, either Article, or Pronoun, as may be seen in the following vèrses :

Ebbe Argánte una spada, e'l fabbro egrégio

L' else e'l pomo le fé gemmáto, e d'oro. Tasso

Argante had a sword, and the eminent artist made its hilt and pommel of gold set with jewels.

La ragión delle genti, e l' uso antico

S' offénda, o no, nè 'l pensa egli, nè 'l cura. Idem.

He neither cares, nor reflects, whether the rights of the people, and the ancient customs are injured, or not.

In many abbreviated words the apostrophe is also made use of; as

Vo' for vóglío. Io vo' condúrti

Nella più spaventévole cavérna. Guarini.

I will take thee into the most dreadful cavern.

Ve', for vedi, as ve' móbile fanciúllo, a che son giúnta.

Idem.

See thou changeable youth, to what I am reduced.

Fe' for fece, as l' idra si fe' muta al suóno. Tasso.

The hydra was silenced by the sound

Me' for méglío, as così me' si vedrà, s'al tuo s'agguáglia il mio valóre. Idem.

Thus it will best be seen, if my valour is equal to thine.

To' for toglí, as dir paréa, to' di me quel, che tu puóí.

Petr.

Seemed to say, take from me what thou canst.

Qua

Qua' for quáli, as qua' sono stati gli anni, e i giórni, e l'ore. Idem.

Which have been the years, the days, and the hours.
Be' instead of belli, as e se 'l tempo è contrário ai bè desiri. Idem.

If opportunity does not favour our ardent wishes.
E' for egli, or églino, as Ed e' si stava in se tutto raccolto. Corteseménte domandò, chi è fóssero. Bocc.
 And he was quite wrapt up in himself. He kindly asked who they were.

Co' for con i, as andrémo omái tu col sol nuóvo, io co' nottúrni rai. Tasso.

We shall set out, thou at the rising, and I at the setting of the sun.

U' instead of dove, or ove, as u' son or le ricchétze? u' son gli onóri? Petr.

Where are now riches? Where are honours?

I' for io, as. I' son coléi, che sì importúna, e fera chiamáta son da voi. Petr.

I am the same whom you call so importunate and cruel.

Of Alterations that happen in some words.

These alterations are commonly made in the beginning or end of a word, either by lengthening, or abbreviating it, as will be easily understood by the following remarks.

The Italians, on account of the softness of their pronunciation, do not admit three consonants in a word; therefore to nouns that begin with *Sp* or *St*, preceded by a monosyllable and terminated by a consonant, is added in the beginning, the vowel, *I*; thus.

In

In istáto; per ispóso; in iscámbo; in Ispágna, &c. for stato, sposo, scámbo, Spágna.

When the vowels *a, e, o*, and the particle *ne* are before a word beginning with a vowel, they admit of the letter *d*, in order to avoid a great concourse of vowels, as *la legge si fa ad arbitrio de' Principi*, the law is made according to the will of Princes. *Piétro ed io difenderémo le ragióni della pátria*. Peter and I will defend our country's cause.

When words may be lengthened.

Pommi in ciélo, od in terra, od in abísso. Petr.

Place me in heaven, on earth, or in hell

Ned ella scopre ardór, ch' egli non senta. Guarini.

Nor does she discover a passion, which he does not feel.

Poets sometimes add an *E* or an *O* to the words ending in an accented vowel, in order to make the verse more harmonious, and often for the sake of rhyme, as

Là, donde ricéve l'alta vostra meschita, e l'áura, e 'l die (for di.) Tasso.

There from whence your lofty mosque receives the air, and the light

L' alma mia, che di là mái non partíó (for partì.) Zappi

My soul, which never departed thence.

The abbreviations that are made to avoid a concourse of vowels, are used but at the end of words, and especially on those where some of the liquid letters, viz. *l, m, n, r*, are found, as *generál*, for *generále*, *sal* for *sale*, *amiám* for *amiámo*, *amerém* for *amerémo*, *buón* for *buóno*, *capitán* for *capitáno*, *dolór*

When words may be abridged.

for *dolóre*, *Signór* for *Signóre*, *invidiár* for *invidiàre*, &c.

Words which end in *E* without an accent,* as *oltre*, *se*, *che*, are generally abridged when they precede a vowel; but when the final *E* is preceded by *C* or *G*, we never retrench it before *A*, *O*, *U*.

The plural of nouns ending in *E* are excepted; for we never say *sal grandi*, *campagn fértili*, *pécor grasse* for *sale grandi*, great halls, *campagne fértili*, fertile countries; *pécore grasse*, fat sheep.

The plurals of nouns ending in *li*, or *ni*, as *mali*, evil, *beni*, goods; are never curtailed.

Words which end in *A* are never retrenched before a consonant, for we always say *una donna*, *alcúna persóna*, *nessúna pena*, and never *un donna*, *alcún persóna*, *nessún pena*.

The words ending in *O* preceded by two *ll*'s, or two *nn*'s, as *fratéllo*, *bello*, *quéllo*, *hanno*, *fanno*, *stanno* &c. lose their last vowel, and one of their consonants before nouns beginning with a single consonant, as *il mio fratel maggióre*, my eldest brother; *il vostro bel volto*, your pretty face; *quél parlàre mi piàce*, that speech pleases me; *le vostre virtù m' han rapíto*, your virtues have charmed me.

The vowel *O* is often suppressed in the relative
Pronoun

* Words which have an accent upon their last syllable, are never curtailed, except *perchè*, *benchè*, *poichè*, and the like

Pronoun *lo* when joined to the conjunctive Pronouns, as *mel* for *melo*, *tel* for *telo*, *sel* for *selo*. *Mel credéva*, I believed it; *tel pensávi*, thou didst think so, *sel' immagináva*, he imagined it.

Santo, *grande*, lose their last syllable before a single consonant; as *San Piétro*, *gran libro*. This last is abridged both in the masculine and feminine gender, in the singular and plural numbers: as *gran palázso*; *gran casa*, *gran palázzi*, *gran case*.

Observe lastly, that the aforesaid abbreviations cannot, in prose, be used in words ending a sentence. *

Of Accents.

Accents are certain marks laid on the final letters of a syllable, as a guide to raise or lower the voice according to the just degree of force required for a perfect pronunciation.

The Accent which is made use of in Italian is called the *Grave Accent*, it is marked thus (`), and is put on the last letter of those substantives that terminate in *ta*, and *tu*, as *sanità*, health; *libertà*, liberty. *Gioventù*, youth;

Grave accent when used.

Z 2

* Poets frequently end a sentence with curtailed words, as in the following verses of Metastasio.

*Chi mai d' iniqua stella
Provò tenór più rio?
Chi vide mai del mio
Più tormentáto cor?*

*Passo di pene in pene
Quésta succéde a quélla;
Ma l' última, che viéne
E' sempre la peggiór.*

youth; *virtù*, virtue.* On the third person singular of the Preterites; as, *amò*, he loved; *temè*, he feared; *sentì*, he felt. On the first and third person singular of the Future Tenses, as *farò*, I shall do; *farà*, he shall do; *leggerò*, I shall read; *sentirà*, he shall feel. As a mark of distinction it is put on those monosyllables that have a double meaning; as *e* conjunction (and); *è* verb (is) *nè* (neither) *ne* (us) *dì* (day) *di* (of). And also on the pronoun *ciò*, (that). On the adverbs *più* (more) *già* (already) *là*, *lì*, (there) *sì* (yes) *così* (so).

Of the Acute Accent thus marked (').

The Acute Accent is not used in Italian.

The Italians make no use of this accent in their writings; † which is not a little embarrassing to foreigners, because even by a long train of rules it is very difficult to indicate in all cases the proper place of this accent, which in the pronunciation must however be attended to, as on it depends entirely what Grammarians call the quantity of the language, or the short or long pronunciation of syllables.

The

* Such words are called in Italian *tronche*, (retrenched); because they come from *libertàde*, *gioventùde*, *virtùde*, *sanitàde*, which terminations still prevail in poetry.

† Except in a few words, such as *balía*, power; *già*, he went; *stropiccio*, friction; in order to distinguish them from *bàlia*, nurse; *giá*, already; *sropiccio*, I rub. Some writers put also the acute accent on *àncora*, the anchor of a ship; *béllico*, warlike; *pérdono*, they loose; *cápitano*, they arrive. In order to distinguish them from *ancóra*, also; *bellico*, navel; *perdóno*, pardon; *capitáno*, captain.

The basis of the Italian Tongue is almost compounded of words, which have their accent on the *Penúltima*, or last syllable but one; as *amóre*, love; *dolóre*, pain; *calóre*, heat.

In other words the seat of this accent is on the *antepenúltima*, or last syllable but two; as in *príncipe*, prince; *gióvane*, young man.

In some others it is before the *antepenúltima*, or last syllable but three; as *mórmorano*, they murmur; *lácerano*, they tear; which happens but seldom.

Note: In words of two syllables the accent is useless; because they can be pronounced but one way, the accent being always on the first syllable.

The acute accent is intentionally placed on all Italian words to be found in these LECTURES, for the express purpose of superseding by a variety of examples, the necessity of a long train of rules upon a subject, which must prove to the Scholar considerably tedious and perplexing.

Of the Circumflex Accent.

This accent is a compound of the Grave and Acute, thus ([^]). It gives a great force to the syllable on which it is placed. In prose it is scarce ever used; in poetry it is used in the following words: *córre* for *cógliere*, to gather; to distinguish it from *corre*, he runs: *amáro*, for *amárono*, they loved; to distinguish it from *amáro*, bitter; *andáro*, *períro* for *andárono*, *perírono*, they went, they perished.

The Circumflex Accent sometimes used in poetry.

LECTURE XXIV.

A TABLE, shewing the Variation of NOUNS, and the use of Articles, &c.

DEFINITE ARTICLE. (1)

MASCULINE GENDER.

Sing. Il principe (2)

Del principe,

Al principe,

Dal principe,

Plur. I principi,

Dei, or de' principi,

Ai, or a' principi,

Dai, or da' principi,

Sing. Lo sdegno (3)

Dello sdegno,

Allo sdegno,

Dallo sdegno,

Plur. Gli sdegni,

Degli sdegni,

Agli sdegni,

Dagli sdegni,

FEMININE GENDER.

Sing. La terra (4)

Della terra,

Alla terra,

Dalla terra,

Plur. Le terre,

Delle terre,

Alle terre,

Dalle terre,

MASCULINE.

Sing. L'amico (5)

Dell' amico,

All' amico,

Dall' amico,

Plur. Gli amici (6)

Degli amici,

Agli amici,

Dagli amici,

FEMININE.

Sing. L'isola (7)

Dell' isola,

All' isola,

Dall' isola,

Plur. Le isole (8)

Delle isole

Alle isole

Dalle isole.

INDEFINITE ARTICLE. (9)

Before proper Names, whether Masculine or Feminine beginning with a Consonant.

Nápoli,

Di Nápoli,

A Nápoli,

Da Nápoli,

Before proper Names, whether Masculine or Feminine beginning with a Vowel.

Alessandro,

D' Alessandro,

Ad Alessandro,

Da Alessandro,



PARTITIVE ARTICLE. (1)

Sing. Del, dello, della, dell', some

A del, a dello, a della, a dell', to some.

Plur. Dei or de', degli, delle, some

A dei or de', a degli, a delle, to some.

(1) The definite article is used before common nouns, possessive pronouns, and before the relative pronoun *quale*, which.—(2) Thus are declined all common nouns masculine beginning with a consonant.—(3) Thus are declined all common nouns masculine beginning with an *S*, followed by another consonant, or with *Z*.—(4) Thus are declined all common nouns feminine beginning with a consonant.—(5) Thus are declined all common nouns masculine beginning with a vowel.—(6) *Gl* is apostrophed only before nouns beginning with an *I*; as *Gl' Imperatōri*, &c.—(7) Common nouns feminine which begin with a vowel, are declined like *L'isola*, &c.—(8) *Le* is apostrophed only before nouns which begin with an *E*; as *L'Eminenze*, &c.

(9) The indefinite article serves for both genders, and numbers before proper names of God, Angels, Men, Cities, &c. before personal pronouns; as *Io, I, Di me*. of me, &c. Before possessive pronouns when they precede names of dignity, or kindred; as *Vostra Eccellenza, suo Padre*, &c. Before demonstrative pronouns; as *Quēsto, cotēsto, quēllo*, &c. Before the relative pronouns *che, chi, cui*; Before the improper pronouns *Ciascūno, nessūno, quālche*, &c. Finally, before *uno*, or *una*; as *Un' uomo*, a man, *una donna*, a woman.—(1) We make use of the partitive article, when we do not speak of the whole substance; as *Del pane*, bread, or some bread, &c. See page 43.

N. B. All nouns which end in *A* in the singular, if they are masculine, change *A* into *I* in the plural; as, *Pœta*, *poēti*, &c. If they are feminine, as they commonly are, they change *A* into *E*, as *Távola*, *távole*. When the singular ends in *E* or *O*, the plural must end in *I*, as, *Padre*, *padri*, *mano*, *mani*, &c. except a few nouns which, ending in *E* in the singular, retain the same termination in the plural; as, *Spēzie*, *effigie*, *superficie*. Nouns ending in *I* in the singular, do not change their termination in the plural; the same is to be understood of nouns ending in an accented vowel, and of monosyllables.

A T A B L E shewing the Inflections of the regular VERBS. (*)

INFINITIVE MOOD.			INDICATIVE.				IMPERATIVE.	SUBJUNCTIVE.		
9. to—	10. Part. active. —ing.	11. Part. passive. —ed.	1. Pre- sent. I do—	2. Imp. I did—	3. Pret. I—ed.	4. Fut. I shall, or will.	5. Do you—	6. Pres. That I may—	7. 1 Imper. I should, or would—	8. 2 Imper. I might—
Am-áre	ándo	M. F. áto áta	o i a iámo áte ano.	áva ávi áva avámo aváte ávano	ái ásti ò ámno áste árono	erò erái erá erémo eréte erámo.	— a i iámo áte ino.	i i i iámo iáte ino	eréi eréstí erébbe erémno eréste erébbero.	ássi ássi ásse ássemo áste ássero.
Créd-ere	éndo	M. F. úto úta	ò i e iámo éte ono.	éva évi éva evámo eváte eváno.	éi ésti è émno éste érono	erò erái erá erámo eréte erámo.	— i a iámo éte ano	a i, or a a iámo iáte ano.	eréi eréstí erébbe erémno eréste erébbero.	éssi éssi ésse éssimo éste éssero.
Favor-íre	éndo	M. F. íto íta	isco isci isce iámo íte iscono.	íva ívi íva ivámo iváte ivano	íi ísti i ímno íte írono	irò irái irá irémo iréte irámo.	— isci isca iámo íte iscano.	isca isca isca iámo iáte iscano.	iréi iréstí irébbe irémno iréste irébbero.	íssi íssi ísse íssimo íte íssero.

(1) By this Table the formation of all the Persons of the different tenses of the regular Verbs of the three Conjugations may be easily learned. The Infinitive, which is the *root* of all tenses, being known, all its inflections are soon learned. For instance, if from the Infinitive *Parlâre* we strike off the three last letters, viz. *are* it remains *parl*, to which syllable if an *o* is added we form the first person of the present tense. If we add *amo*, it forms the first person plural of the same tense. If to the syllable *parl* we add *erò* the first person singular of the future tense is formed; if *erei*, we form the first person singular of the first Imperfect of the Subjunctive Mood. And so on &c.

As to many other verbs which in some tenses deviate from the above, and which are here after alphabetically arranged, the following general remarks will be of very great use to the Learner.

Observe 1st, That all the verbs of the first conjugation are regular, except four, viz. *Andâre, Dare, Fare, Stare*. The compounds of *Dare* and *Stare*, as *Secondâre, Accostâre*, &c. are regular. The compounds of *Fare*, as *Disfâre, Liquefâre*, &c. follow the irregular conjugation of their original verb *Fare*.

2dly, There is a great variation in the preterites of the verbs belonging to the second conjugation. When *Ere* is long, and there is a *C* before it, as *Tacere, Giacere, Piacere*, we add a *Q* in the first, and third person singular, and in the third person plural, and give it a particular termination thus: *Tacqui, Giacquì, Piacquì, Tacque, Giacque, Piacque, Tacquero, Giacquero, Piacquero*.

In the verbs that have the consonant *L* before *Ere*, as *Valere, Dolere*, and their compounds, the preterite is formed by taking away *Ere*, and by adding *si, se*, in the singular, and *sero* in the plural; as, *Valsi, Valse, Valse, Dolsi, Dolse, Dolsero*.

The preterite of *Avère, Cadere, Tenere, Sapere, Volere*, is formed by doubling their consonant, and by adding *I, E* to it in the singular, and *ero* in the plural; *Ebbi, Ebbe, Ebbero Caddi, Cadde, Caddero, Tenni, Tenne, Ténnero, Seppi, Seppe, Séppero, Volli, Volle, Vóllo*.

Avère and *Sapere* change their vowel *A* into *E*; as *Ebbi, Seppi*, and the *v* of *avère* is changed into two *bb's*.

The verbs that in the first person singular of the present of the indicative mood end in *ggo*, as *leggo* from *leggere*, end in *ssi* in the preterite; as *leggo*, *lessi*, *eléggo*, *eléssi*, *traggo*, *trassi*, *trafiggo*, *trafissi*, &c.

The verbs ending in *Dere* short, and preceded by a vowel, as *Chiedere*, *Recidere*, &c. terminate their preterite in *si*, as *Chiesi*, *Recisi*, &c.

The verbs which in the first person of the present have before the last vowel two different consonants, the first of which is one of the three liquids *L*, *N*, *R*, form their preterite by preserving the liquid, and adding *si*; as *Scelgo*, *Scelsi*, *Dolgo*, *Dolsi*, *Frango*, *Fransi*, *Piango*, *Piansi*, *Ardo*, *Arsi*, *Accórgo*, *Accórsi*, &c.

As for the terminations of the irregular Participles it must be observed that when the preterite of a verb ends in *ssi* as *lessi*, *eléssi*, *trassi*, &c. the Participle is in *tto*, as *letto*, *elétto*, *tratto*. When the preterite ends in *si* preceded by a vowel, as *accési*, *difési*, &c. in the Participle *si* is changed into *so*, as *accéso*, *diféso*, &c. except *chiesi*, *rispósi*, *misi*, which make in the Participle *chiésto*, *rispósto*, *messo*.

Those Verbs which have their preterite in *Lsi*, as *scelsi*, *sciólsi*, &c, have their Participle in *Lto*, as *scelto*, *sciólto*, except *calse*, and *vals*; the Participle of which is *calúto*, *valúto*.

The verbs whose preterite terminates in *Nsi*, as *piansi*, *giúnsi*, *finsi*, have their Participle in *Nto*, as *piánto*, *giúnto*, *fínto*, &c.

When the preterite ends in *Rsi*, as *ars*, *spars*, *accórsi*, *scórsi*, the Participle ends sometimes in *Rso*, as *arso*, *sparso*; sometimes in *Rto*, as *accóрто*, *scorto*.

The verbs of the third conjugation have their Participle in *Ito*, but *comparire*, *aprire*, *morire*, *offrire*, *profferire*, make their Participles thus *compárso*, *apérto*, *morto*, *offérto*, *profférto*.



AN
ALPHABETICAL LIST
OF THE
IRREGULAR VERBS,

Conjugated in those Tenses in which they vary
from the Regular ones.

*The Figures 1, 2, 3, 4, &c. mark the Tenses as in the preceding Table, and the
letter v. means Vide, or see the conjugation of the verb, &c.*

ACCADÉRE, *to happen, v.* Cadère. The former is
an impersonal verb

Accén-dere, *to light, v.* Préndere
3. accénsi, and accénse, with
11. accénso, are poetical ex-
pressions (1)

Accchiúdere, *v.* Chiúdere

Accíngersi, *to prepare one's self,*
v. Cíngere

Accógliere, *to receive, v.* Cóg-
gliere

Accór-gersi, *to perceive*

3. si, gésiti, se, gémmo, gése,
sero

11. to. The compound ten-
ses are formed with *essere*,
and this is the case with all
reflective verbs.

Accórrere, *v.* Córrere

Accréskere, *v.* Créskere

Addiveníre, *to happen, v.* Ve-
nìre; the first is an impersonal
verb.

Addúcere (*obsolete*) *v.* Addúrre
Addú-rre, *to bring, to alledge*

1. co, ci. ce, ciámo, cète, conc,
3. ssi, césti, sse, cémmo, cést,
ssero

4. rrò, rrái, rrà, rrémo, rréle,
rránno

5. ci, ca, ciámo, cète, cano

6. ca, ca, ca, ciámo, ciáte, cano

7. rréi, &c.

8. céssi, &c.

10. céndo

11. addótto

Affiggere, *to fix, v.* Afflígere

11. affisso

Afflí-ggere, *to afflict*

3. ssí, ggésti, sse, ggémmo,
ggéste, ssero

11. tto

Affrángere, *v.* Frángere

Aggiacére, *v.* Giacére

Aggiúngere, *to add, v.* Giúngere

Algere, *to freeze, a verb used*
chiefly in poetry, and only in

(1) *E spesso l'un contrario all' altro accénse.*

Per non trovarvi i duo bei lumi accénsi. (Petr)

the third person singular of the present tense, viz. *alge*, and in the first and third person singular of the preterite of the indicative mood, viz. *alsi*, *alse*

Ammettere, to admit, v. Mèttre

Ancidere, to kill, (1) v. Uccidere

Andare, (2) to go

1. *vado*, or *vo*, *vai*, *va*, *andiamo*, *andate*, *vanno*

3. *andrò*, &c. better than *anderò*, &c.

5. *va*, *vada*, *andiamo*, *andate*, *vadano*

6. *vada*, *vadi*, or *vada*, *vada*, *andiamo*, *andate*, *vadano*

7. *andrèi*, &c.

Angere, to grieve, (3) a defective verb, and used only in poetry

Anteporre. to prefer, v. Porre

Antivedere, to foresee, v. Vedere

Antivenire, to prevent, v. Venire

Apparire, to appear

1. -- *re*, in poetry (4)

3. *rsi*, or *rui*, *risti*, *rse*, or *rue* -- *rvero*

11. *rso*

Appartenere, to belong, v. Tenere

Appendere, to hang, v. Sospendere

Apporre, to impute, v. Porre

Apprendere, to learn, v. Prendere

Aprire, like Dormire, except

3. *èrsi*, or *rìi*, *risti*, *èrse*, or *rì*, *rimmo*, *riste*, *èrsero*, or *rirono*

11. *érto*

Ardere, to burn

3. *si*, *dèsti*, *se*, *dèmmo*, *dèste*, *sero*

11. *so*

Ardire, to dare, like the regular verb *favorire*; only we never say *ardiamo*, *ardiate*, *ardendo*, these inflections being like those of the verb *ardere*, to burn We make use in the above tenses of the regular verb *osare*, or else we say *abbiamo ardire*, *abbiate ardire*, *avendo ardire*, in order to prevent any ambiguity that might arise

Arrendere, to surrender, v. Rendere

Arridere, to smile, v. Ridere

(1) *Ancidere* is rather a poetical expression. Exam.

E se un tempo l' ancide al fine il sana. (Pastor Fido,)

(2) This verb is often made reflexive with the particle *ne*; as *andarsene*, which answers to the French *s'en aller*. In the second person singular of the Imperative mood, we double the *t*, and say *vattene*, and sometimes *vanne*. especially in poetry. Its compound tenses are formed with *essere*. We also make use of the verb *andare* instead of *dovere*; as *Questo non va detto*, *quello non andava fatto*, &c. meaning *Questo non deve dirsi*, *quello non doveva farsi*, &c.

(3) *Potria 'l fuoco allentâr che 'l cor tristo ange.* (Petr.)

(4) *D'auero ha la chioma, ed or dal bianco velo
Traluce involta, or discoperta appare.* (Tasso)

Arrógere, *to add*, a defective and poetical verb (5)

Ascéndere, *v.* Scéndere

Ascó-ndere, *to conceal*

3. *si, ndésti, se, ndémmo, ndéste,*

sero

11. *so*

Ascrívere, *to ascribe*, *v.* Scrívere

Aspér-gere, *to sprinkle*,

3. *si, gésti, se, gémmo, géste,*

sero

11. *so*

Assalíre, *to assault*, *v.* Salíre

Assí-dersi, *to sit down*

3. *si, désti, se, démmo, déste,*

sero

11. *so* (6)

Assístere, *to assist*

11. *Assistito*

Assólvere, *to absolve*, *v.* Risól-
vere

Assú-mere, *to assume*

3. *nsi, mésti, nse, mémmo, méste,*

nsero

11. *nto*

Astenére, *to abstain*, *v.* Tenére

Astrárre, *to abstract*, *v.* Trarre

Astríngere, *to compel*, *v.* Strín-
gere

Atténdere, *to wait*, *v.* Préndere

Attenére, *v.* Tenére

Attíngere, *to draw*, *v.* Cíngere

Attór-cere, *to twist*

3. *si, césti, se, cémmo, céste,*

sero

11. *to*

Attrárre, *v.* Trarre

Avvéllere, *v.* Svéllere

Avveníre, } *v.* Veníre

Avvenírsi, }

Of these two verbs the former signifies *to happen*, and is in-
personal; the latter *to me*
with, and is reflexive

Benedícere, *obsolete* } *v.* Dire

Benedíre, *to bless*

Be-re, (7) *to drink*

1. *o, i, e, iámo, éte, ono*

2. *éva, évi, éva, evámo, evát*
évano

3. *vvi, éstí, vve, émmo, ést*
vvéro

4. *rò, rai, rà, rémo, réte, ránn*

5. *i, a, iámo, éte, ano*

6. *a, i, or a, a, iámo, iáte, an*

7. *réi, résti, rébbe, rémmo, rést*
rébbero

8. *éssi, éssi, ésse, éssimo, ést*
éssero

13. *éndo*

11. *vúto*

Benvolére, *to love*, *v.* Volére

Ca-dére, *to fall*

1. *do, or ggio, in poetry* (

3. *ddi, désti, dde, démmo, dés*
ddero

6. *da, da, da, or ggia, in po*

(5) *E duólmi ch' ogni giorno arróge al danno.* (Petr.)

(6) The compound tenses are formed with *éssere*.

(7) We likewise make use of *bévere*, which is a regular verb: but
stead of *bevéi, bevè, bevérono, beverò, beveréi, &c.* we often say *be-*
beuve, bévvero, berò, beréi, &c.

(8) *Or mi sollévo, or cággio.* (Petr.)

- try (9) *aiámo, diáte, dano*
 4. *drò, drái, drá, drémo, dréte, dránno*
 4. *drèi, &c.*
 10. *déndo, or ggéndo* in poetry (10)
Ca-lére, to care for. Impersonal
 3. *lse* [verb
 6. *cágliá*
Cápere, a defective and obsolete verb, instead of which we make use of the verb capíre. In the Dictionary of La Crusca we find 1. *cape*, (11) 2. *capéva*, or *capea*, 11. *catto*, and no other tenses
Cédere, to submit, v. Concédere
 11. *cedúto*, and never *cesso*
Cérnere, to sever, v. Scérnere
Chérere, to demand, a defective verb
 1. *chero*,— *chere*, in poetry [12]
Chié-deie, to ask
 1. *do, ggo, or ggio, di, de, or re* [13] *diámo, déte, dono, ggono, or ggiono*
 3. *si, or detti, désti, se, or dette, démmo, déste, sero, or*
déttero
 11. *sto*
Chiú-dere, to shut
 3. *si, désti, se, démmo, déste, sero*
 11. *so*
Cín-gere, or Cígnere, to gird
 1. *go, gi, ge, giámo, géte, gono*
 3. *si, gésti, se, gémmo, géste, sero*
 11. *to*
Circoncídere, to circumcise, v. Divídere
Circonscrivere, to limit, v. Scrivere
Circonveníre, to circumvent, v. Veníre
Có-gliere, or Corre, to gather
 1. *glio, or lgo, gli, glie, gliámo, gliéte, gliono, or lgono*
 3. *lsi, gliésti, lse, gliémmo, gliéste, lsero*
 11. *lta*
Cólere, to honour, an obsolete and defective verb [14]
Comméttere, to command, v. Mètttere
Commuóvere, v. Muóvere
Comparíre, v. Apparíre

(9) *Qual uom ch' aspétti, che sul collo ignúdo*
Ad or ad or gli cággia il ferro crudo. (Tasso.)

(10) *Il Nil d'alto caggendo*
Col gran suóno i vicín d'intórno assórda. (Petr.)

(11) *Questa prima vógliá*
Merto di lode, o di biásmo non cape. (Dante.)

(12) *Soccórso a' suoi perígli altro non chere. (Tasso.)*

(13) — *Roma ognóra*
Ti chier mercè da tutti sette i colli. (Petr.)

(14) This verb is seldom used but in poetry, wherein *colo*, and *cole* are metimes introduced, Exam.

— *Al loco torno*
Che per te consecráto onóra, e colo. (Petr.)

Compiacére,

Compiacére, *to comply, v.* Pia-
cére

Compiángere, *to lament, v.* Pián-
gere

Compórre, *to compound, v.* Porre

Compréndere, *to comprehend, v.*

Prénde.re

Comprométtere, *to compromise,*
v. Prométtere

Compúngere, *to grieve, v.* Un-
gere

Concé-dere, *to grant*

3. *ssí, déi, or détti, désti, sse,*
dè, or dette, démmo, déste,
sseo, or dèttero

11. *dúto, or sso*

Concérnere, *to concern, v.* Scér-
nere

Conchiúdere, *to conclude, v.* Chiú-
dere

Concórriere, *to concur, v.* Cór-
rere

Condescéndere, *to condescend, v.*
Scéndere

Condolére, *to complain, v.* Do-
lére

Condúrre, *to lead, v.* Addúrre

11. *condútto, in poetry [15]*

Confáre, *to become, c.* Fare

Configgere, *to nail, v.* Affliggere

Confóndere, *to confound, v.* Fón-
dere

Conó-scere, *to know*

3. *bbi, scésti, bbe, scémmo,*
scéste, bbero

11. *sciúto*

Conquídere, *to afflict, v.* Diví-
dere

Consístere, *to consist, v.* Assís-
tere

Conténdere, *to quarrel, v.* Prén-
dere

Contenére, *to contain, v.* Tenére

Contórcere, *to twist, v.* Tórcere

Contradíre, *to contradict, v.* Dire

Contraffáre, *to counterfeit, v.* Fare

Contrapórre, *to oppose, v.* Porre

Contrárre, Contráere, *to contract,*
v. Trarre

Conveníre, *to agree, v.* Veníre

Convíncere, *to convict, v.* Vín-
cere

Convívère, *to live together, v.*
Vívère

Convólgere, *to wallow, v.* Vól-
gere

Copríre, *to cover, v.* Apríre

Corre, a contraction of the verb
Cógliere

Corréggere, *to correct, v.* Lég-
gere

Có-rrere, *to run*

3. *rsi, rrésti, rse, rrémmo,*
rréste, rsero

11. *rso*

Corrispóndere, *to agree with, v.*
Rispóndere

Corródere, *to fret, v.* Ródere

Corrómpere, *to deprave, v.* Róm-
pere

Cospérgere, *v.* Aspérgere

Costríngere, *to constrain, v.* Strín-
gere

Cré-scere, *to grow*

3. *bbi, scésti, bbe, scémmo,*

(15) *E' gita al Cielo, ed hammi a tal condútto,
Che gli occhi miei non lássan loco asciútto. (Petr.)*

scéste, bbero

11. *sciúto*

**Crocifiggere, to crucify, v. Affig-
gere**

Cu-círe, to sew

1. *cio, ci, ce, ciámo, cíte, ciono*

2. *cíva, &c.*

3. *cú, &c.*

4. *cirò, &c.*

5. *ci, cia, ciámo, cíte, ciano*

6. *cia, &c.*

7. *ciréi, &c.*

8. *císsi, &c.*

**Cuócere, & Cócere, to boil, bake,
dress**

1. *cuóco, cuóci, cuóce, cuociámo,
cuocéte, cuócono*

3. *cossi, cuocésti, or cocésti,
cosse, cuócemmo, cuocéste, or
cócéste, cóssero*

4. *cocerò, or cuocerò, &c.*

7. *coceréi, or cuoceréi, &c.*

8. *cocéssi, or cuocéssi, &c.*

10. *cuocéndo*

11. *cotto*

Cuopríre, v. Copríre

Dare, to give (16)

1. *do, dai, dà, diámo, date,
danno*

3. *diédi, or detti, desti, diéde,*

*dette, or dié', demmo, deste,
diédéro, déttero, diédono,
diérono, and in poetry diér,
diéro, denno [17]*

5 *da, dia, and formerly dea,
diámo, date, diéno, diáno,
deano*

6. *dia, dia, dia, diámo, diáte,
diéno, or diáno*

7. *daréi, &c.*

8. *dessi, dessi, desse, déssimo,
deste, déssero, or déssono*

Decadére, to decay, v. Cadére

Decídere, to decide, v. Divídere

Dedúrre, to deduce, v. Addúrre

Delúdere, to delude, v. Chiúdere

Depórre to depose, v. Porre

Derelínquere, to forsake (18)

Derídere, to deride, v. Divídere

**Descrívere, to describe, v.
Scrívire**

Desiáre, to wish for. This verb
is used only in poetry (19). In
prose we commonly use *de-
sideráre*, or *bramáre*, which
are regular verbs

**Detérgere, to scour, v. Aspér-
gere**

Detrárre, to détrañt, v. Trarre

Diacére [obsolete] v. Giacére

(16) The verbs compound of *dare*, or *stare*; such as *secondáre*, *circondáre*, *accostáre*, *souvastáre*, are regular.

(17) — *Tal rispósta diéro.* (Dante.)

Ov' è il bel ciglio, e l'una e l'altra stella,

Ch' al corso del mio viver lume denno? (Petr.)

(18) *Derelínquere* is entirely Latin, and seldom used, only the passive participle *derelitto* is now and then employed by good authors.

(19) Boccace and other classical authors of the XIV century have often used both *desiáre*, and *disiáre* in prose. Their conjugation is regular; but I never met with these verbs in the imperative mood, nor in the present of the subjunctive mood.

Dícere [*obsolete*] *v.* Dire

Diféndere, *to defend, v.* Préndere

Diffóndere, *to diffuse, v.* Fóndere

Diméttere, *to discontinue, v.* Mèttere

Dipíngere, *to paint, v.* Cíngere

Di-re, *to say*

1. *co, ci, ce, ciámo, te, cono*

2. *céva, cévi, céva, cevámo, ceváte cévano*

3. *ssi, césti, sse, cémmo, céste, ssero*

4. *rò, &c.*

5. *ì, ca, ciámo, te, cano*

6. *ca, chi, or ca, ca, ciámo, ciáte, cano*

10 *céndo*

11. *detto, and not Didétto*

Dirígere, *to direct, v.* Erígere

Discéndere, *v.* Scéndere

Discérnere, *v.* Scérnere

Dischiúdere, *v.* Chiúdere

Disciórrere, a contraction of Disciógliere

Disconveníre, *to misbecome, v.* Veníre

Discopríre, *to discover, v.* Copríre

Discórrere, *to discourse, v.* Cór-rere

Disdíre, *to deny, v.* Dire

Disfáre, *to undo, v.* Fare

Disgiúngere, *to disjoin, v.* Giúngere

Disiáre. *v.* Desiáre

Disméttere, *to dismiss, v.* Mèttere

Disparíre, *to disappear, v.* Apparíre

Dispérdere, *to disperse, v.* Pérdere

Dispérgere, *to scatter, v.* Aspérgere

Dispiacére, *to displease, v.* Piacére

Dispórrere, *to dispose, v.* Porre

Dissólvere, *to dissolve, v.* Risólvere

Disténdere, *to stretch, v.* Préndere

Distín guere, *to distinguish*

3. *ssi, guésti, se, guémmo, guéste, sero*

11. *to*

Distógliere, *to divert from, v.* Cógliere

Distórrere, a contraction of Distógliere

Distrárrere, *to avert from, v.* Trárrere

Distrúggere, *to destroy, v.* Strúggere

Disvéllere, *to pluck, v.* Svéllere

Ditenére, *to detain, v.* Tenére

Divedére, *to show, v.* Vedére

Divéllere, *to root up, v.* Svéllere

Diví dere, *to divide*

3. *si, désti, se, démmo, déste, sero*

11. *so*

Divólgere, *to wrap, v.* Vólgere

Dolére, an impersonal verb which signifies *to ache*, as *Mi duóle la testa*, my head aches, &c.

Do-lérsi, a reflective verb, *to complain*

1. *lgo, or glio, duóli, duóle, gliámo, léte, lgono, or gliono*

3. *lsi, or lei, lésti, lse, lémmo, léste, lsero*

4. *rrò, &c.*

5. *duóli, lga, or glia, gliámo, léte, lgano, or gliano*

6. *glia,*

6. *glia*, or *lga*, *lga*, *lga*, *gliámo*,
gliáte, *gliano*, or *lgano*

7. *rrèi*, &c. [20]

Dovére, to be obliged

1. *devo*, *debbo*, or *déggio*, *devi*,
debbi, or *dei*, *deve*, *debbe*, *dee*,
or *de'* in poetry; *dobbiámo*,
dovéte, *dévonno*, *débbono*, *dég-*
giono, or *déono* [21]

3. *dovétti*, *dovésti*, *dovétte*, *do-*
vémmo, *dovéste*, *dovéttero*

4. *dòvrò*, *dovrai*, *dovrà*, &c.

5. *debba*, *debba*, *debba*, *déggia*,
or *débbia*, *dobbiámo*, *dobbiáte*,
débbano, *déggiano*, or *déb-*
bianò [22]

6. *dovreì*, &c. [23]

Dúcere and Durre, to lead, both
obsolete; instead of them we
make use of Condúrre

Eléggere, to elect, v. Léggere

Elícere, to draw [24]

Elúdere, to elude, v. Chiúdere

Equivalére, to be equivolent, v.
Valére

Er-ígere, to erect, or raise

3. *éssi*, *igésti*, *ésse*, *igémmo*, *igéste*,

éssero

11. *etto*

Er-gere, to erect

3. *si*, *gésti*, *se*, *gémmo*, *géste*,
sero

11. *étto*

Escíre, v. Uscíre

Esclúdere, to exclude, v. Chiúdere

Esígere, to require

11. *esátto*

Esístere, to exist, v. Assístere

Esp-èllere, to expel

3. *úlsi*, *ellésti*, *úlse*, *ellémo*,
elléste, *úlsero*

11. *úlso*

Espórre, to expose, v. Porre

Espr ímere, to express

3. *éssi*, *imésti*, *ésse*, *imémmo*,
iméste, *éssero*

11. *éssò*

Esténdere, to extend, v. Spén-
dere

Estínguere to extinguish, v. Dis-
tínguere

Estrárre, to extract, v. Trarre

Fácere, (obsolete) v. Fare

Fare, to do

1. *fo*,

[20] The compound tenses are formed with *Essere*.

[21] Of the three inflections belonging to each of the persons in this
tense, (the 1st and 2d of the plural excepted,) the first of them is only for
common conversation, or familiar writings; the second is the most correct;
and the third is poetical.

(22) *Mentre son questi alle bell' opre intènti*
Perche débbiano tosto in uso porre. (Tasso)

(23) I find in Petrarca *devrò*, *devreì*, *devria*, for *dovrò*, &c.

(24) Tasso has very elegantly made use of the third person singular of
the present tense of the indicative mood, in the following verse;

Questo finto dolor da molti elice -
Lágrime vere :

But I do not find any other tense, or person used by our poets.

1. *fo*, or *faccio*, *fai*, *fa*, and *face* in poetry ; (25) *facciámo*, *fate*, *fanno*
2. *Fácevo*, *facéva*, or *facéa*, *facevi*, *faceva*, *facea*, and *fea* in poetry ; (26) *facevámó*, &c.
3. *feci*, or *fei*, *facesti*, or *festi*, *fece*, *fe'*, and *feo* in poetry ; (27) *facémmo*, *faceste*, *fécero* and poetically *fero*, (28) and *fenno* (29)
5. *fa*, *fáccia*, *facciámó*, *fate*, *fácciano*
6. *fáccia*, *fáccia*, *fáccia*, *facciámó*, *facciáte*. *fácciano*
8. *facessi*, *facessi*, *faceste*, and poetically *fesse* (30) *facessimo*, *faceste*, *facessero*
9. *faréi*, *farésti*, *farébbe*, or *faría*, *farémmo*, *faréste*, *farébbéro*, *farébbono*, or *faríano*
10. *facéndo*
11. *fatto*

Feríre, to strike, like *Capire*

2. *fero*, *feri*, *fere*, are poetical expressions (31). I likewise find *ferúto* for *ferúto* in Dante, and in some other ancient poets, but it is never used by any modern writer of note.

Fiédere, to strike, a poetical expression (32)

Fíggere, v. *Affíggere*

11. *fitto* and *fisso*

Fíngere, to feign, v. *Cíngere*

Fóndere, to melt

3. *fusi*, *fondésti*, *fuse*, *fondémó*, *fondéste*, *fúsero*

21. *fuso*

Frammèttère, to put among, v. *Mèttère*

Frán-gere, to break

3. *si*, *gèsti*, *se*, *gémmo*, *gèste*, *sero*

11. *to*

Frapórrè, to interpose, v. *Porre*

Fríggere, to fry, v. *Afflíggere*

Fúlgerè,

B b 2

- (25) *Che pro se con quegli occhi clla ne face*
Di state un ghiácchio, un fuóco quando verna. (Pet.)
- (26) ——— *Audáce, e baldo*
Il fea degli anni, e dell' amóre il caldo. (Tasso.)
- (27) *Italia, Italia, o tu cui feo la sorte.*
Dono infelice di bellézze, &c. (Filicaia)
- (28) *Molti cadéndo compagnia gli fero.* (Tasso.)
- (29) *Ove son le bellézze accólte in ella,*
Che gran tempo di me lor vógliá fenno? (Petr.)
- (30) *Il maggior don che Dio per sua larghézza*
Fesse creándo, &c. (Dante.)
- (31) *Chi sa come difénde, e come fere*
Soccórso a' suoi perígli altro non chere. (Tasso.)
- (32) *Ecco io chino le bráccia, e t' apprésento*
Senza difésa il petto, or che nol fiédi. (Tasso.)

Fúlgerè, *to bright*, a defective verb

3. - -fulse

Gia-cére, *to lie down*

1. ccio, -ci, ce, cciámo, cète, cciono

3. cqui, césti, cque, cémmo, cète, cquero

5. ci, ccia, cciámo, cète, cciano

6. ccia, ccia, ccia, cciámo, cciáte, cciano

11. ciúto

Gire, *to go*, a defective verb, and used only in poetry.

1. voi gite

2. givo, giva, or gía, givi, giva, or gía, givámo, giváte, givano, or giano

3. gii, gisti, gì, or gío, gimmo, giste, girono

5. gite, (voi)

8. gissi, &c.

11. gito

Giúgnere, *v. Giüngere*

Giún-gere, *to arrive*, or *join*

3. si, gésti, se, gémmo, géste, sero

11. to

Illúdere, *to delude*, *v. Elúdere*

Imbévere, *to imbibe*, *v. Bévere*, or *Bere*

Immérgere, *to immerge*, *v. Aspérgere*

Impórre, *to order*, *v. Porre*

Impréndere, *to undertake*, *v. Préndere*

Imprimere, *to print*, *v. Espri- mere*

Inchiúdere, *to inclose*, *v. Chiú- dere*

Incídere, *to grave*, *v. Uccídere*

Inclúdere, *to include*, *v. Chiú- dere*

Incórrere, *to incur*, *v. Córre*

Incréscere, *to be sorry*, (imper- sonal verb) Créscere

Indurre, *to induce*, *v. Addúrre*

Infíngere, *to feign*, *v. Cíngere*

Infóndere, *to infuse*, *v. Fóndere*

Inframéttere, *to intermeddle*, *v. Méttre*

Infrángere, *to break*, *v. Frán- gere*

Ingiüngere, *to charge*, *v. Giün- gere*

Inscrivere, *to inscribe*, *v. Scrí- vere*

Insístere, *to insist*, *v. Assístere*

Insórgere, *to rise against*, *v. Risórgere*

Instruire, *to instruct*

3. instruii, or instrússi, &c.

11. instruíto, or instrútto

Inténdere, *to understand*, *v. Préndere*

Intercédere, *to intercede*, *v. Concédere*

Interdíre, *to prohibit*, *v. Dire*

Interméttere, *to interrupt*, *v. Méttre*

Interpórre, *to interpose*, *v. Porre*

Interrómpere, *to interrupt*, *v. Rómpere*

Interténere, *to detain*, *v. Tenére*

Intervenire, *to happen*, *v. Venire*

Intígnere, *to dig*, *v. Intíngere*

Intíngere, *v. Cíngere*

Intraméttere, *to intermeddle*, *v. Méttre*

Intrapréndere, *to undertake*, *v. Préndere*

Intrídere, *to temper*, *v. Dividere*
Introdúrre,

Introdurre, to introduce, v. Ad-
durre

Intrudere, to intrude, v. Chiù-
dere

Invadere, to invade, v. Persua-
dere

Involgere, to cover, v. Volgere

Involvere, to wrap up, a poe-
tical verb (33)

11. involuto

Ire, to go. This is a defective
verb, and seldom used but by
poets. The inflections in use
are the following :

2. *iva*, he was going ; *ivano*,
they were going

4. *irémo*, we shall go ; *iréte*,
you shall go ; *iranno*, they
shall go

5. *ite*, go (you) (34)

11. *ito*. This participle is
more used than *andato*, the
regular participle of the
verb *Andare*

Istruire. v. Instruire

Lassare, to leave. A regular
verb which is frequently used
in poetry instead of *Lasciare*

Lé-dere, to offend

3. *si*, *désti*, *se*, *démmo*, *déste*,
sero

11. *so*

Lécere, a poetical verb (35)

v. Lícere

Léggere, to read

3. *lessi*, *leggésti*, *lesse*, *leggé-
mo*, *leggéste*, *léssero*

11. *letto*

Lícere, or Lécere, to be lawful
permitted, &c. A defective and
impersonal verb, which is sel-
dom used but in poetry (36)

The only inflections of this
verb are *Lice* and *Lece*, for
the third person singular of
the present tense of the indi-
cative mood, and *Lécito* for
the participle passive

Lú-cere, to shine. This verb is
without a participle.

3. *ssi*, *césti*, *sse*, *cémmo*, *céste*,
ssero

Maledire, to curse, v. Dire

Malfare, to do wrong, v. Fare

Mantenere, to maintain, v. Te-
nere

Mérgere, to plunge, v. Asper-
gere

Mettere, to put

3. *misi*, *mettésti*, *mise*, *mettém-
mo*, *mettéste*, *miserò*

11. *messo*

Mór-dere, to bite

3. *si*, or *détti*, *désti*, *se*, or
détte, *démmo*, *déste*, *sero*, or
déttero

(33) *Ecco il nemico è quì, mira la polve
Che sott' órrida nube il ciélo involve.* (Tasso.)

(34) *Ite velóci ed oppriméte i rei.* (Idem)

(35) *Ormai ti lece*

Per te stesso parlár con chi ti piace. (Petr.)

(36) *Per quánto lice*

Al destin de' mortáli, ésser felice. (Metast.)

11. *so**Morire, to die*

1. *muóio, and poetically, moro*
 (37) *muóri, muóre, or more,*
muoiámo, or moriámo, mo-
ríte, muoióno, or mórono

3. *morii, morísti, morì, and*
morío, in poetry, &c. (38)

4. *morro and morirò, &c.*

5. *muóri, or mori, muóia, or*
mora, muoiámo, or moriámo,
moríte, muóiano, or mórano

6. *muóia, muóia, or muói, muóia,*
muoiámo, muoiáte, muóiano

7. *morrei, or moriréi, &c.*

11. *morto, which is sometimes*
used for ucciso, killed

*Móvere, to move, v. Muóvere**Múgnere, v. Múngere**Mún-gere, to milk*

3. *si, gèsti, se, gémmo, gèste,*
sero

11. *to**Muóvere, to move*

1. *muóvo, or movo, vi, ve, mo-*
viámo, véte, muóvono

3. *mossi, movèsti, mosse, mo-*
vémmo, movèste, móssero

4. *moverò, &c.*

5. *muóvi, muóva, moviámo,*
movéte, muóvano

10. *movéndo*

11. *mosso*

Ná-scere, to be born

3. *cqui, scèsti, cque, scémmo,*
scèste, cquero

11. *to**Nascóndere, v. Ascóndere**Negáre, to deny*

1. *nego, and niégo, neghi, and*
nieghi, nega, and niéga,
neghiámo, and nieghiámo,
negáte, négano, and niégano

5. *nega, and niéga, &c.*

6. *neghi, and niégghì, &c.*

Negl-igere, to neglect

3. *éssi, igèsti, ésse, igémmo,*
igèste, éssero

11. *étto**Nócere, v. Nuócere**Nuócere, to hurt*

1. *nuóco, nuóci, nuóce, nuóciá-*
mo, nuocéte, nuócono

3. *nocqui, nuocésti, or nocèsti,*
nocque, nuocémmo, nuocéste,
nóccquero

5. *nuóci, nuóca, nociámo, no-*
céte, nuócano

6. *nuóccia, or nuóca, &c.*

11. *nuociúto, or nociúto*

*Occidere, v. Uccidere**Occórrere, to happen, v. Cór-*
*rere**Odíre, v. Udíre**Offéndere, to offend, v. Prén-*
*dere**Olí-re, to smell, a defective verb*

2. *va, vi, vá, -- vano*

*Ométtere, to omit, v. Méttere**Oppórrere, to oppose, v. Porré**Opprimere, to oppress, v. Espri-*
*mere**Otténere,*(37) *Io di dolór mi moro**E non lo posso dir. (Metast.)*(38) *E tal morío qual visse. (Dante.)*

Ottenére, to obtain, v. Tenére

Pa-rére, to appear

1. io, ri, re, iámo, réte, iono
3. rui, résti, rue, rémmo, réste, rvero

4. rrò, &c.

5. ri, ia, iámo, réte, iano

6. ia, ia, ia, iámo, riáte, iano

7. rrei, &c.

11. rúto, or rso. The compound tenses are formed with the auxiliary verb *éssere*

Páscere, to feel

11. pasciúto

Pave, he fears, the only poetical inflection of a defective verb, from the Latin *paveo* (39)

Perc-uótere, to strike

3. óssi, uotésti, ósse, uotémmo, uotéste, óssero

11. ósso

Pér-dere, to lose

3. déi, or si, désti, dè, dette, or se, démmo, dèste, dérono, dèttero, or sero

Perméttere, to permit, v. Mét-tere

Persístere, to persevere, v. Assís-tere

Persua-dére, to persuade

3. si, désti, se, démmo dèste, sero

11. so

Perveníre, to reach, v. Veníre

Piacére, to please, v. Giacére

Piágnere, to weep, v. Piángere

Piángere, v. Frángere

Pígnere, to paint, v. Píngere

Píngere, v. Cíngere

Pió-vere, to rain, an impersonal verb.

3. vve, and sometimes bbe

Pónere, v. Porre

Pórgere, to present, v. Scórgere

Po-rre, anciently Pónere, to put

1. ngo, ni, ne, niámo, or ngghiámo, nète, ngono

2. neva, &c.

3. si, nésti, se, némmo, nète, sero

4. rrò &c.

5. ni, nga, niámo, or ngghiámo, nète, ngano

6. nga, nga, or ngghi, nga, ngghiámo, ngghiáte, ngano

7. rrei, &c.

8. néssi, &c.

20. néndo

11. sto

Pospórrre, to postpone, v. Porre

Possedére, to possess, v. Sedére

Po-tére, to be able

2. sso, puói, può, and puóte in poetry; [40] ssiámo, téte, ssono, and nno in poetry [41]

3. tei,

(39) *E quella, in cui l' etàde*

Nostra si mira, la qual piombo, o legno

Vedéndo è chi non pave. (Petr.)

Nè così di leggiér si turba, o pave. (Tasso.)

(40) *Quésti, or Macóne adóra, e fu Cristiano*

Ma i primi riti ancór lasciár non puóte. (Tasso.)

(41) *Le tue bráccia*

Che scuóter forse, e sollevár la ponno. (Petr.)

3. *tei, tésti, tè*, and in poetry *téo*, [42] *témmo, téste, térono*
 4. *trò*, &c.
 9. *ssa, ssi*, or *ssa, ssa, ssiámo, ssiáte, ssano*
 7. *tréi, trésti, trébbe, tria*, or *ria* in poetry, [43] *trémmo, tréste, trébbero, triano*
Precórrere, to fore-run, v. Cor-rere
Predíre, to predict, v. Dire
Prefiggere, to prefix, v. Affiggere
Preméttere, to say before, m. Méttete
Pré-ndere, to take
 3. *si, ndésti, se, ndémmo, ndéste, sero*
 11. *so*
Prepórre, to prefer, v. Porre
Prescrivere, to prescribe, v. Scrí-vere
Presedére, to preside, v. Sedére
Presúmere, to presume, v. Assú-mere
Presupórre, to presuppose, v. Porre
Preténdere, to pretend, v. Prén-dere
Prevalére, to prevail, v. Valere
Prevedére, to foresee, v. Vedére
Preveníre, to prevent, v. Veníre
Prodúrre, to produce, v. Ad-dúrre
Profóndere, to dissipate, v. Fón-dere
Prométtere, to promise, v. Mét-tere
Promuóvere, to promote, v. Muó-vere
Propórre, to propose, v. Porre
Prorómpere, to break forth, v. Rómpere
Prosciógliere, v. Prosciórre
Prosciórre, to absolve, v. Corre, or Cógliere
Proscrivere, to proscribe, v. Scrí-vere
Proseguíre, to prosecute, v. Se-guíre
Protéggere, to protest, v. Lég-gere
Proténdere, to stretch, v. Tén-dere
Protrárre, to protract, v. Trarre
Provedére, to provide, v. Ve-dére
Proveníre, to proceed, v. Veníre
Púgnere, to prick, v. Púngeré
Púngere, v. Ungere
Putrefáre, to putrify, v. Fare
Raccéndere, to kindle, v. Ac-céndere
Racchiúdere, to enclose, v. Chiú-dere
Raccógliere, v. Raccórre
Raccórre, v. Corre, and Cógliere
Rá-dere, to shave
 3. *si, désti, se, démmo, déste, sero*
 11. *so*
Raggiúgnere, to rejoin, v. Rag-giúgnere

(42) *Queste fur l'arti onde mill' alme e mille*
Prénder furtivamente ella potéo. (Tasso)

(43) *Ma qual suon poria mai salir tant alto ? (Petr.)*

giungere
 Raggiungere, *v. Giungere*
 Rattenére, *to detain, v. Tenére*
 Ravvólgere, *to wrap, v. Vól-
 gere*
 Réc-ere, *to vomit*
 1. io, i, e, iámo, éte, iono
 5. i, ia, iámo, éte, iano
 ia, i, or ia, ia, iámo, iáte,
 iano
 11. iúto
 Recídere, *to cut, v. Divídere*
 Red-ímere, *to redeem*
 3. énsi, imésti, énte, imémmo,
 iméste, éntero
 11. redento
 Réggere, *to govern, v. Léggere*
 Réndere, *to render, v. Préndere*
 3. resi, or rendéi, &c.
 Reprímere, *to repress, v. Esprí-
 mere*
 Rescrivere, *to transcribe, v. Scrí-
 vere*
 Resistere, *to resist, v. Assístere*
 Riaccéndere, *to re-kindle, v. Ac-
 céndere*
 Riapríre, *to re-open, v. Apríre*
 Riavére, *to have again, v. Avére*
 Ribére, *to drink again, v. Bere*
 Ricadére, *to relapse, v. Cadére*
 Richiédere, *to request, v. Chié-
 dere*
 Ricíngere, *to gird, v. Cíngere*
 Ricompórre, *to compose again, v.*
 Compórre
 Ricondúrre, *to re-conduct, v.*
 Condúrre
 Riconóscere, *to know again, v.*
 Conóscere
 Ricopríre, *to cover again, v.*
 Copríre

Ricórrere, *to have recourse, v.*
 Córrere
 Ricrédere, *to disabuse, v. Cré-
 dere*
 Rídere, *to laugh, v. Divídere*
 Ridíre, *to repeat, v. Dire*
 Ridúrre, *to reduce, v. Addúrre*
 Rifáre, *to do again, v. Fare*
 Rifóndere, *to new cast, v. Fón-
 dere*
 Rifrángere, *to reflect, v. Frán-
 gere*
 Rifríggere, *to fry again, v. Fríg-
 gere*
 Riléggere, *to read again, v. Lég-
 gere*
 Rilúcere, *to shine, v. Lúcere*
 Rima-nére, *to dwell*
 ngo, ni, ne, niámo, néte, ngono.
 3. si, nésti, se, némmo, néste,
 sero
 4. rrò, &c.
 5. ni, nga, niámo, néte, ngano
 6. nga, nga, nga, niámo, niáte,
 ngano
 7. rréi, &c.
 11. so, or sto
 Riméttere, *to re-place, v. Mét-
 tere*
 Rimórdere, *to feel-remorse, v.*
 Mórdere
 Rimóvere, *v. Móvere*
 Rimuóvere, *to remove, v. Muó-
 vere*
 Rináscere, *to be born again, v.*
 Náscere
 Rinchiúdere, *to inclose, v. Chiú-
 dere*
 Rincréscere, *to be displeased, v.*
 Créscere
 Rinveníre, *to find out, v. Veníre*
 Rinvólgere,

- Rinvólgerere, *to involve*, v. Vólgerere
- Ripercuótere. *to strike back*, v. Percuótere
- Ripérdere, *to loose again*, v. Pérdere
- Ripiángere, *to weep again*, v. Piángere
- Ripórre, *to replace*, v. Porre
- Ripréndere, *to take back*, v. Préndere
- Risapére, *to be told of*, v. Sapére
- Riscrívere, *to write again*, v. Scrívere
- Riscuótere, *to exact*, v. Percuótere
- Risedére, *to reside*, v. Sedére
- Risól-vere, *to resolve*
3. si, vésti, se, vémmo, véste, sero
11. úto
- Risór-gere, *to rise up again*
3. si, gèsti, se, gémmo, gèste, sero
11. to
- Risospíngere, *to drive back*, v. Cíngere
- Risovveníre, *to remember*, v. Veníre
- Rispíngere, *to repulse*, v. Cíngere
- Rispo-ndere, *to answer*
3. si, ndésti, se, ndémmo, ndéste, sero
11. sto
- Ristríngere, *to restrain*, v. Stríngere
- Ritenére, *to retain*, v. Tenére
- Riíngere, *to die again*, v. Cíngere
- Ritógliere, *to retake*, v. Tógliere
- Ritórcere, *to twist back*, v. Tórcere
- Ritórre, *to retake*, v. Torre
- Ritrárre, *to extract*, v. Trarre
- Rivedére, *to revise*, v. Vedére
- Rivéndere, *to resell*, v. Véndere
- Riveníre, *to return*, v. Veníre
- Rivívere, *to come to live again*, v. Vivere
- Rivólgerere, *to revolve*, v. Vólgerere
- Riuscíre, *to succeed*, v. Uscíre
- Ró-dere, *to gnaw*
3. si, désti, se, démmo, déste, sero
11. so
- Rómpere, *to break*
3. ruppi, rompésti, ruppe, rompémmo, rompéste, rúppero
11. rotto
- Sal-ire, *to ascend*
1. go, or saglio, i, e, iámo, or sagliámo, íte, gono, or ságliano
5. i, ga, or ságliá, ghiámo, íte, gano, or ságliano
6. ga, or ságliá, ghi, or ga, ga, or ságliá, ghiámo, or sagliámo, ghiáte, or sagliáte, gano, or ságliano
- Sapere, *to know*
1. so, sai, sa, sappiámo, sapéte, sanno
3. seppi, sapésti, seppe, sapém-mo, sapéste, séppero
4. sapró, &c.
5. sappi, sáppia, sappiámo, sappiáte, sappiáno
6. sappia, &c.
7. sapréi, &c.
- Scadére, *to decay*, v. Cadére
Scé-gliere,

Scé-gliere *to choose*

3. *lsi, glièsti, lse, gliémmo, gli-
éste, lsero*

11. *lto*

Scé-ndere, *to descend*

3. *si, ndésti, se, ndémmo, ndéste,
sero*

11. *so*

Scér-nere, *to discern*

3. *si, nèsti, se, némmo, néste,
sero.* And let it be obser-
ved that Cérnere is conju-
gated like this verb; but
Cóncernere, and Discérnere
are regular, though depri-
ved of their participle, which
inflection in the verb Cér-
nere is regular, and in Scér-
nere does not appear to
exist

Schiùdere, *to open, v. Chiùdere*

Sciògliere, *to untie, v. Cògliere*

Sciórre, *to loose, v. Corre*

Scomméttere, *to bet, v. Mèttete*

Scompórre, *to discompose, v.*

Compórre

Sconfiggere, *to rout, v. Fríggere*

Scontórcere, *to wrest, v. Tór-
cere*

Sconveníre, *to misbecome, v. Ve-
nìre*

Sconvólgere, *to confound, v. Vól-
gere*

Scopríre, *to uncover, v. Copríre*

Scór-gere, *to discover*

3. *si, gésti, se, gémmo, géste,
sero*

Scórrere, *to run slow, v. Cór-
rere*

Scri-vere, *to write*

3. *ssi, vésti, sse, vémmo, véste,
ssero*

11. *tto*

Scuótere, *to shake, v. Percuó-
tere*

Sedére, *to sit down*

1. *seggo, or sièdo, sièdi, siède,
sediámo, sedéte, séggono, or
siédono*

5. *siedi, segga, or sièda, sediá-
mo, sedéte, séggano, or sié-
dano*

6. *segga, or sièda, &c.*

Sedúrre, *to seduce, v. Addúrre*

Seguíre, *to follow*

1. *seguo, or siégua, segui, or
siégui, segue, or siégue, se-
guiámo, seguíte, séguono, or
siéguono*

5. *segui, or siégui, segua, or
siégua, seguiámo, séguíte, sé-
guano, or siéguano*

6. *segua, or siégua, &c.*

Sfare, *to undo, v. Fare*

Silére, *to be silent, a defective
verb used only in poetry (44)*

Smóvere, *v. Móvere*

Smúngere, *to dry up, v. Mún-
gere*

Smuóvere, *to stir up, v. Muó-
vere*

Socchiùdere, *to half-shut, v. Chiù-
dere*

Soccórrere,

(44) *Preso dal nuóvo canto stupe, e sile. (Varchi.)*

- Soccórrere, *to succour*, v. Cór-
rere
- Soddisfare, *to satisfy*, v. Fare
- Soffriggere, *to fry lightly*, v. Fríg-
gere
- Soggiacere, *to be subject*, v. Gia-
cere
- So-lere, *to be accustomed*, a de-
fective verb (45)
1. *glio, suóli, suóle, gliámo, léte, gliono*
 2. *lévo, or léva, &c. and soléa* in poetry
 6. *glia, glia, glia, gliámo, gli-áte, gliano*
 10. *lendo*
 11. *lito*
- Sommérgere, *to drown*, v. As-
pérgere
- Somméttere, *to submit*, v. Méttete
- Sopprimere, *to suppress*, v. Es-
pírmere
- Sopraggiungere, *to come unex-
pected*, v. Giungere
- Soprascrivere, *to superscribe*, v.
Scrivere
- Sopraspendere, *to spend too much*,
v. Sedere
- Sopravvenire, *to come unexpect-
edly*, v. Venire
- Sopravvivere, *to survive*, v. Ví-
vere
- Soprintendere, *to superintend*, v.
Intendere
- Sórgere, *to rise*, v. Risórgere
11. *surto*, for *sorto* is some-
times made use of in poe-
try (46)
- Soprendere, *to surprise*, v. Prén-
dere
- Sorréggere, *to support*, v. Rég-
gere
- Sorridere, *to smile*, v. Rídere
- Soscrivere, *to subscribe*, v. Scrí-
vere
- Sospéndero, *to suspend*, v. In-
téndere
- Sospingere, *to push*, v. Cíngere
- Sostenere, *to sustain*, v. Tenere
- Sottintendere, *to understand*, v.
Inténdere
- Sottomettere, *to submit*, v. Mét-
tere
- Sottoscrivere, *to subscribe*, v.
Scrivere
- Sottrarre, *to draw away*, v.
Trarre
- Sovvenire, *to help*, v. Venire
- Spárgere, *to spread*
3. *si, gésti, se, gémmo, géste, sero*
 11. *so*
- Sparire, *to disappear*, v. Appa-
rìre
- Spé-gnere, *to extinguish*
3. *nsi, gnésti, nse, gnémmo, gnéste, nsero*
 11. *nto*
- Spé-ndere,

(45) The tenses are formed with the auxiliary verb *Essere*, and the pas-
sive participle *Sólito*, viz. *Io fui sólito*, &c. which answers to the Latin
Fui solitus. We may likewise say, *Io sono sólito* *Io era sólito*, and so
on through all tenses.

(46) *Argánte Argánte ste so ad un grand urto*
Di Rinaldo abbattúto appéna è surto. (Tasso.)

Spé-ndere, *to spend*

3. *si, ndésti, se, ndémmo, ndéste, sero*

11. *so*

Spíacére, *to displease, v. Píacére*

Spíngere, *to push, v. Cíngere*

Spórgere, *to stretch out, v. Pórgere*

Sprovvedére, *to leave destitute, v.*

Provédere

Stare *to live, or to be, v. Dare*

Sténdere, *to extend, v. Préndere*

Stórcere, *to twist, v. Tórcere*

Stravedére, *to see much, v. Vedére*

Stravólgere, *to wrest, v. Vólgere*

Strígnere, *v. Stríngere*

Strín-gere, *to bind fast*

3. *si, gésti, se, gémmo, géste, sero*

11. *stretto*

Strú-ggere, *to melt*

3. *ssi, ggésti, sse, ggémmo, ggés-to, ssero*

Stúpere, *to wonder, a defective verb, and merely poetical*

1. *stupe, be wonders (47)*

Succédere, *to succeed, v. Concé-dere*

Succíngere, *to tuck up, v. Cíngere*

Svél-lere, *or Sverre, to pull up*

3. *si, lésti, se, lémmo, léste, sero*

11. *to*

Sveníre, *ta faint away, v. Veníre*

Svólgere, *to unfold, v. Vólgere*

Suppórrere, *to suppose, v. Porre*

Sussístere, *to subsist, v. Esístere*

Tacére, *to hold one's tongue, v.*

Gíacére

Tángere, *to touch, a defective and poetical verb, of which we find*

1. -- *tange (48) and few inflectives beside*

Téndere, *to tend, v. Préndere*

Ten-ére, *to hold*

1. *go, tiéni, tiéne, iámo, éte, gono*

3. *ni, ésti, ne, émmo, éste, nero*

4. *terrò, &c.*

5. *tiéni, ga, iámo, éte, gano*

6. *ga, &c.*

7. *terrèi, &c.*

Térgere, *to clean, v. Aspérgere*

Tíngere, *to dye, v. Cíngere*

Tógliere, *to take away, v. Cógliere*

Tórcere, *to twist, v. Attórcere*

Tradúrre, *to translate, v. Addúrre*

Trafiggere, *to transfix, v. Affliggere*

Tralúcere, *to shine through, v.*

Lúcere

Tráere, *v. Trarre*

Tra-rre, *to draw*

1. *ggo, ggi, gge, or e, ggiámo, éte, ggono*

2. *éva, &c.*

3. *ssi, ésti, sse, émmo, éste, ssero*

4. *rrò, &c.*

5. *ggi,*

(47) *Preso dal nuovo canto stupe, e sile. (Varchi.)*

(48) *Io son fatta da Dio, sua mercè, tale*

Che la vostra mi seria non mi tange. (Dante.)

5. ggi, ggi, ggiámo, éte, ggano

6. gga, &c.

7. rréi, &c.

8. éssi, &c.

10. éndo

11. tto

Trascégliere, v Scégliere

Trascéndere, *to surpass*, v ScéndereTrascórrere, *to run over*, v Cór-rereTrascrívere, *to transcribe*, v Scrí-verreTrasfóndere, *to pour from one vessel into another*Trasméttere, *to transmit*, v Mét-tereTraspórrere, *to transpose*, v PorreTrattenére, *to entertain*, v Te-néreTravedére, *to see double*, v Ve-déreTravólgere, *to invert*, v VólgereVa-lére, *to be worth*

1. glio, li, le, gliámo, léte, glíono,

3. lsi, lésti, lse, lémmo, léste, lsero

4. rrò, &c.

5. li, glia, gliámo, léte, gliano

6. glia, &c.

7. rréi, &c.

11. lúto, or lso,

Uccídere, *to kill*, v DivídereUdíre, *to hear*

1. odo, odi, ode, udiámo, udíte, ódono

5. odi, oda, udiámo, udíte, ódano

6. oda, oda, oda, udiámo, udi-áte, ódano

Ve-dére, *to see*

1. do, ggo, ggio, di, de, diámo, ggiámo, déte, dono, ggonno

3. vidi, or ddi, désti, vide, or dde, démmo, déste, vídero, or ddero

4. drò, &c.

5. di, da, or gga, diámo, or ggiámo, déte, dano, or ggano

6. da, or gga, &c.

7. drei, &c.

11. duto, or visto

Ven-íre, (49) *to come*

1. go, viéni, viéne, iámo, íte, gono

3. ni, ísti, ne ímmo, íste, nero

4. verró, &c.

5. viéni, ga, iámo, íte, gono

6. ga, ga, ga, iámo, or ghiámo, íate, or ghiáte, gano

7. verréi, &c.

11. úto

Vígere, *to be vigorous*, a defective verb

1. ---vige

Vín-cere, *to conquer*

3. si, césti, se, cémmo, céste, sero

11. to

Ví-verre, *to live*

3. ssi,

(49) We sometimes make a reflexive verb of *Venire*, viz. *Venirsene*.
Exam.

Mirata da ciascùn passa e non mira

La bella Donna e innánzi al re sen viéne. (Tasso.)

* Sometimes *Viéne* is used instead of *è*, *it is*; as *Vien dett*, *Vien supposto*, *it is said*, *it is supposed*.

3. *ssi, vésti, sse, vémmo, véste, ssero*
 11. *vúto, or ssúto*
 Ugnere v. Ugnere
 Un-gere, to anoint
 3. *si, gésti, se, gémmo, géste, sero,*
 11. *to*
 Vo-lére, (50) to be willing
 1. *glio, and vo' vuói, vuóle gliámo, léte, gliono*
 3. *lli, lésti, lle, lémmo, léste, llero*
 4. *rrò, &c.*
6. *glia, &c.*
 7. *rréi, &c.*
 Vól-gere, to turn
 3. *si, gésti, se, gémmo, géste, sero*
 11. *to*
 Uscíre, to go out
 1. *esco, esci, esce, usciámo, uscite, ésono*
 5. *esci, esca, usciámo, uscite, éscano*
 6. *esca, &c.*

A Collection of Regular Verbs in Are conjugated like amáre. See the table of Verbs, page 176.

In order to save some trouble to beginners, I have here thought proper to insert the following collection, which will furnish the mind with the most necessary Verbs commonly used in conversation.

<i>Abbandonare,</i> { to forsake, or or abandon	<i>Accomodársi,</i> to sit down
<i>Abbracciare,</i> to embrace	<i>Accompagnare,</i> to accompany
<i>Abbruciare,</i> to burn	<i>Acconciare,</i> to mend
<i>Accampare,</i> to encamp	<i>Accordare,</i> { to agree, or put in tune
<i>Accarezzare,</i> to caress	<i>Accostare,</i> to approach
<i>Accettare,</i> to accept	<i>Accusare,</i> to accuse
<i>Accomodare,</i> to mend	<i>Acquistare,</i> to acquire
	<i>Adattare,</i>

(50) *Volére* is sometimes used for *Dovére*, as *Si vuole osserváre, &c.* is to be observed, &c. where *si vuóle* means *si deve*.

- Adattare*, to adapt
Additare, to point out with one's finger
Addormentarsi, to fall asleep
Adirarsi, to fall into a passion
Adulare, to flatter
Affirmare, to affirm
Affittare, to let out
Affrettare, to hasten
Affrontare, to affront
Aiutare, to help
Alloggiare, to lodge
Allontanare, to remove
Alzare, to raise
Alzarsi, to rise or to get up
Ammazzare, to kill.
Amministrare, to administer
Ammirare, to admire.
Ammogliarsi, to marry, or to take to wife
Amplificare, to amplify
Annegare, to drown
Applicare, to apply
Appoggiare, to support or lead
Approvare, to approve
Arricciare, to curl
Arrischiare, } to venture or ha-
Arrisicare } zard
Arrivare, } to arrive at
Capitare, }
Asciugare, to dry
Ascoltare, to hearken
Assaltare, to assault
Assediare, to besiege
Aspettare, { to expect, or wait
 { for
Assicurare, to assure
Avanzare, to advance
Avvicinare, { to go, or put
 { near
Avvisare, to give notice
Augurare, to wish
Aumentare, to increase
Baciare, to kiss
Bagnare, to wet
Ballare, to dance
Battezzare, to baptize
Bestemmiare, to curse
Beffare, to deride
Biasimare, to blame
Burlare, to jest or laugh at
Bussare, to knock
Cagionare, to cause
Camminare, to walk
Cambiare, to change
Cantare, to sing
Caseare, to fall
Castigare, to punish
Cavalcare, to ride
Cenare, to sup
Cercare, to seek or look for
Certificare, to certify
Chiamare, to call
Ciarlare, to prattle
Cicalare, to chatter
Comandare, to command
Cominciare, { to begin
Incominciare, {
Compitare, to spell
Comprare, to buy
Condannare, to condemn
Confessare, to confess
Consirmare, to confirm
Confrontare, to confront
Congiugare, to conjugate
Consegnare, to deliver
Conservare, to keep, or preserve
Considerare, to consider
Consigliare, { to advise
Consultare, {
Contrastare, to quarrel, or con-
 tend.

Copiare, to copy
Coronare, to crown
Corteggiare, to court
Curare, to cure
Declinare, to decline
Dedicare, to dedicate
Desiderare, to desire or wish
Desinare, to dine
Dichiarare, to declare
Diffidare, to mistrust
Digiunare, to fast
Dimenticarsi, to forget
Disfidare, to challenge
Disimpegnare, to disengage
Dispensare, to bestow
Disputare, to dispute
Disegnare, to design
Dissimulare, to dissemble
Dissipare, to waste
Disingannare, to undeceive
Disprezzare, to despise
Disturbare, to disturb
Diventare, to become
Dimandare, } to ask
Domandare, }
Domare, to tame
Dominare, to domineer
Dubitare, to doubt
Durare, to last
Entrare, to come in
Ereditare, to inherit
Errare, to mistake
Esaltare, to exalt
Esperimentare, } to experience
Sperimentare, }
Esortare, to exhort
Evitare, to avoid
Fabbricare, to build
Fatigare, }
Travagliare, } to work
Lavorare, }

Felicitare, to wish one joy
Fermare, to stop, or shut
Fidare, to trust
Fissare, to fix
Fomentare, to foment
Formare, to form
Fortificare, to fortify
Frequentare, to frequent
Fumare, to smoke
Gelare, to freeze
Gettare, }
Buttar via } to throw away
Giocare, to play
Giudicare, to judge
Giurare, to swear
Gonfiare, to swell
Governare, to govern
Gratificare, to gratify
Grattare, to scratch
Gridare, to cry out
Guadagnare, to win, or get
Guardare, to look at, to guard
Guastare, to spoil
Guidare, to guide
Gustare, }
Tastare, } to taste
Saggiare }
Imbarazzare, } to embarrass or
Imbrogliare, } perplex
Imbriacare, to make one drunk
Imitare, to imitate
Immaginarsi, to imagine
Imparare, to learn
Impegnare, to engage, or pawn
Impiccare, to hang
Impiegare, to employ
Inclinare, to incline
Incoraggiare, to encourage
Incontrare, to meet
Indorare, to gild
Indovinare, to guess

Informare, to inform
Infiammare, to inflame
Ingannare, to cheat, or deceive
Ingiuriare, to abuse
Innamorarsi, to fall in love with
Insegnare, to teach
Intagliare, to engrave or carve
Inventare, to invent
Invidiare, to envy
Invitare, to invite
Irritare, to irritate
Lagrimare, to weep
Lamentarsi, to complain
Lasciare, to leave
Lavare to wash
Legare, to tie or bind,
Levare, to take away
Licenziare, to dismiss.
Licenziarsi, to take one's leave
Lodare, to praise
Mandare, to send
Mandare a dire, to send word
Mancare, to fail
Mangiare, to eat
Marciare, to march
Marinare, to pickle
Maritarsi, to marry, viz. to take
to husband
Masticare, to chew
Meritare, to deserve
Mescolare, to mix
Migliorare, to grow better
Minacciare, to threaten
Minchionare, to joke or laugh at
Mirare, to look or behold
Misurare, to measure
Mostrare, to shew
Mutare, to change
Narrare, to relate
Negare, to deny

Negoziare, to trade
Nettare, to polish or cleanse
Notare, to note
Nuotare, to swim
Obbligare, to oblige
Odiare, to hate
Odorare, to smell
Onorare, to honour
Ornare, to adorn
Osservare, to observe
Pagare, to pay
Parlare, to speak
Passare, to pass
Passeggiare, } to take a walk
Spasseggiare, }
Peggiorare, to grow worse
Pensare, to think
Perdonare, to pardon
Pesare, to weigh
Pettinare, to comb
Piegare, to fold up
Pigliare, to take
Pigliare in } to borrow
préstito, }
Pizzicare, to pinch
Portare, to carry, or bring
Pranzare, to dine
Pregare, to pray
Pregiare, to prize
Predicare, to preach
Preparare, to prepare
Presentare, to present
Prestare, to lend
Privare, to deprive
Procurare, to procure, or en-
deavour
Prolungare, to prolong
Procrastinare, to delay
Pronunziare, } to pronounce
Pronunciare }

Provare,

Provare, to try
Provocare, to provoke
Pubblicare, to publish
Raccomandare, to recommend
Raccontare, to relate
Rallegrarsi, to rejoice
Rassomigliare, to resemble
Recitare, to repeat
Replicare, to reply
Respirare, to breathe
Ricamare, to embroider
Ricordare, to remember
Risutare, to refuse
Rimediare, to remedy
Ringraziare, to thank
Riportare, to carry back again
Riposare, to rest
Riputare, to repute
Rispettare, to respect
Ritornare, to return
Rubare, to steal or rob
Ruinare, to ruin
Russare, to snore
Saltare, to jump
Salutare, to salute
Sanare, to heal
Scaldare, to warm
Scancellare, to blot out
Scappare, to escape
Scherzare, to joke
Scusare, to excuse
Sdruciolare, to slip, or slide
Seguitare, to go on, or follow
Separare, to separate
Sgraffiare, to scratch
Sgridare, to scold
Sigillare, to seal
Smoccolare la candela, to snuff
 the candle
Soffiare, to blow
Sognare, to dream

Solleticare, to tickle
Sonare, to play a tune upon
Sonare la campanella, to ring the
 bell
Sopportare, to suffer
Sospettare, to suspect
Sospirare, to sigh
Sotterrare, to bury
Sparagnare, to spare
Spaventare, to affright
Sperare, to hope
Spiegare, to explain
Spogliare, to undress
Sporcare, to dirty
Sputare, to spit
Stampare, to print
Starnutare, to sneeze
Stimare, to esteem
Stracciare, to tear
Strapazzare, to ill use
Studiare, to study
Sudare, to sweat
Svegliare, to awake
Superare, to overcome
Supplicare, to beseech
Tagliare, to cut
Terminare, to finish
Testificare, to testify
Tirare, to pull
Tirare di spada, to fence
Toccare, to touch
Tollerare, to suffer
Tormentare, to torment
Trafficare, to trade
Tramare, to plot
Trasportare, to transfer
Trascurare, to neglect
Traslatore, to translate
Trattare, to treat
Tremare, to tremble
Trionfare, to triumph

Trovare, to find
Vacillare, to be wavering
Vantare, to boast or praise
Vendicarsi, to revenge
Viaggiare, to travel
Vietare, to forbid

Visitare, to visit
Volare, to fly
Voltare, to turn
Vomitare, to vomit
Usare, to use
Usurpare, to usurp, &c. &c.

A collection of Regular Verbs in Ere conjugated like credere. Page 125.

The following are the only Regular Verbs in the second conjugation.

Cred.	éi	ésti	è	émmo	éste	érono
	or		or			or
	étti	ésti	étte	émmo	éste	éttero

Battere, to beat
Bevere, to drink
Cedere, to yield
Fendere, to cleave
Frémere, to rage
Gémere, to groan
Godere, to enjoy
Miètere, to reap or mow
Pascere, to feed
Pèndere, to hang down

Récere, to vomit
Ricévere, to receive
Rilúcere, to shine
Ripètere, to repeat
Sedere, to sit down
Splèndere, to glitter
Serpere, to creep along
Stridere, to make a noise
Temere, to fear
Vèndere, to sell

Though the Participle is formed from the Infinitive by changing *ere* into *uto* in the Second Conjugation as *credere*, *credúto*; yet in the Participles of *pascere* and *récere* you must put an *i* before *uto*, as *pasciúto*, *reciúto*, not *pascúto*, *recúto*, as has been observed in the list of irregular Verbs.

The Verb *rilúcere*, to shine, has no Participle.

A collection of Regular Verbs in Ire conjugated like favorire. See page 127

Abbolire, to abolish
Abborrire, to abhor
Adempire, to accomplish

Aderire, to adhere
Addolcire, to sweeten
Alleggerire, to lighten

Ammoniac

Ammonire, to admonish
Ammutare, to become dumb
Anneghittire, to grow indolent
Ardire, to dare
Arricchire, to enrich
Arrossire, to blush
Attribuire, to attribute
Avvertire, to warn
Avvilire, to abase
Bandire, to banish
Bianchire, to whiten
Capire, to comprehend
Colpire, to strike
Compatire, to excuse
Concepire, to conceive
Condire, to season
Consequire, to obtain
Definire, to define or determine
Differire, to defer
Digerire, to digest
Esaudire, to grant one's request
Eseguire, to execute
Fallire, to wound
Finire, to finish
Fiorire, to flourish
Fornire, to furnish
Gradire, to like or approve of
Impallidire, to turn pale
Impedire, to hinder
Inasprire, to exasperate
Incrudelire, to grow cruel

Indebolire, to grow weak
Ingagliardire, to grow stronger
Ingerirsi, to intermeddle with
Instruire, to instruct
Insuperbire, to grow proud
Languire, to languish
Mentire, to lie
Munire, to fortify
Nutrire, to nourish
Ordire, to plot
Partorire, to lay in
Patire, to suffer
Percepire, to perceive
Perire, to perish
Presagire, to presage, or foretel
Proibire, to forbid or prohibit
Punire, to punish
Rapire, to take away
Riverire, to revere
Sbigottire, to astonish
Scolpire, to engrave
Sminuire, to diminish
Spédire, to dispatch
Stabilire, to establish
Stordire, to stun, or amaze
Suggestire, to suggest
Supplire, to supply
Tradire, to betray
Trasgredire, to transgress
Ubbidire, to obey
Unire, to unite, &c.

Note, That some of the above Verbs in *Isco* do not follow the conjugation of the Verb *favorisco*, and differ also from the Verb *dormire* in the Perfect or Participle, viz.

<i>Apparire</i> ,	} to appear;	<i>apparisco</i> ,	<i>apparsi</i> ,	<i>appârso</i> .
<i>Comparire</i> ,		<i>comparisco</i> ,	<i>comparsi</i> ,	<i>compârso</i> .
<i>Costruire</i> ,	} to build or construe;	<i>costruisco</i> ,	<i>costrússi</i> ,	<i>costrútto</i> .

Offrire

<i>Offrire,</i> }	to offer;	<i>offro,</i>	<i>offrui,</i>	<i>offerto.</i>
<i>Offerire,</i> }		<i>offerisco,</i>	<i>offerſi,</i>	
<i>Preferire,</i>	to prefer;	{ <i>preferisco,</i>	<i>preferui,</i>	<i>preferito.</i>
			<i>preferſi,</i>	<i>preferito.</i>
<i>Proferire,</i>	to proffer;	{ <i>proferisco,</i>	<i>proferui,</i>	<i>proferito.</i>
			<i>proferſi,</i>	<i>proferito.</i>
<i>Soffrire,</i>	to suffer;	{ <i>soffro,</i>	<i>soffrui,</i>	<i>sofferto.</i>
<i>Sofferire,</i>		<i>sofferisco,</i>	<i>sofferſi,</i>	
<i>Sepellire,</i>	to bury;	<i>sepellisco,</i>	<i>sepellui,</i>	{ <i>sepellito,</i>
				or
				<i>sepolto.</i>

There are some Verbs that may belong either to the First or Third Conjugation, on account of the double Termination that they may have in the Infinite, as,

Colorare or *colorire*, to colour.

Impazzare or *impazzire*, to become mad.

Inacerbare or *inacerbire*, to grow sour.

Incoraggiare or *incoragire*, to encourage.

Indurare or *indurire*, to harden.*

The few Verbs in *Ire* conjugated like *dormire* (See page 127.) are the following,

Aprire, to open †

Bollire, to boil

Consentire, to consent

Convertire, to convert

Coprire, to cover

Cucire, to sew

Fuggire, to run away

Mentire, to lie

Morire, to die

Partire, to depart

Pentirsi, to repent

Salire, to ascend

Seguire, to follow

Sentire, to hear

Servire, to serve

Soffrire, to suffer

Sortire, to go out

Vestire, to dress

Uscire, to go out

Udire, to hear



* The termination in *are* is the best.

† The verbs *aprire*, *coprire*, *morire*, *soffrire*, *salire*, *udire*, *uscire*, may be reckoned among the Irregular Verbs on account of the different terminations they have in some tenses, as has been seen in the list of the Irregular Verbs.

ERRATA.

<i>Page</i>	<i>Line</i>	<i>For</i>	<i>Read</i>
5	23	O following V.	O following U
6	15	ever occurs	never occurs
7	15	Lyon	Lyons
10	21	Squiting	Squinting
13	9	hear	hair
36	10	John	Jane
38	5	bruccaito	bruciato
39	19	a yellow	a yellow flower
46	3	camiccia	camicia
54	2	old woman	old man
102		Lecture XVIII.	XVII.
107	15	Intensione	Intenzione
107	6	I had	if I had
114	10	desider	desiderj
143	3	denare	desinare
154	17	every day	every other day
191	3	pascere <i>to feel</i>	pascere <i>to feed</i>
199	20	acquistiare	acquistare
200	30	consirmare	confirmare

Handwritten musical notation on staves, including notes and clefs, appearing as faint pencil or light ink markings.



